

歩く世界は 魔女がいる 世界で

THE WORLD

THE GAMES IS

WORLD'S

06

三嶋与夢
イラスト／孟達

THE GAMES IS

WORLD'S

三嶋与夢
イラスト／孟達

GC NOVELS



アロガソツは、損傷した両手両足のパーツを
バージする。コンテナもバージして落下していくと、
シユヴェールトが背中に回り込み
アロガソツとドッキングした。

「合体は男の子の夢だな」

『巨大ロボになれずに
申し訳ありませんね』

「馬鹿、嫌みじやねーよ」

アロガソツの失った手足が新しい物に交換
され、聖樹の枝を避けながら飛ぶ。
そこに、追いかけてきた魔装が見えた。

ルイーゼさんが抱きついてくると、泣いていた。

「ごめん。ごめんね。
本当に——ごめんね」

ここでお姉ちゃんと呼ぼうか迷つたが——止めた。
俺が言えば空気をぶち壊すと思ったので、体を貸す
だけに留める。

乙女ゲー世界は★
THE WORLD OF OTOME GAMES IS A TOUCH FOR MOBS.
モブに厳しい世界です

06



C
O
N
T
E
N
T
S

| | |
|-------------------|-----|
| プロローグ | 007 |
| 第01話 「笑えない屑」 | 035 |
| 第02話 「セルジュ」 | 058 |
| 第03話 「姉弟」 | 081 |
| 第04話 「あの日の約束」 | 103 |
| 第05話 「生け贋」 | 137 |
| 第06話 「補給艦イデアル」 | 171 |
| 第07話 「暗躍する者」 | 196 |
| 第08話 「空賊旗」 | 210 |
| 第09話 「攻略対象VS攻略対象」 | 234 |
| 第10話 「利用する者」 | 260 |
| 第11話 「リオン君」 | 295 |
| 第12話 「レスピナス家の真実」 | 313 |
| エピローグ | 335 |
| 番外編 「アーロンちゃん」 | 351 |

Table of Contents

[Table of Contents](#)

[Prologue](#)

[Chapter 1 - Unusable Trash](#)

[Chapter 2 – Serge](#)

[Chapter 3 - Sister and Brother](#)

[Chapter 4 - The Promise That Day](#)

[Chapter 5 – Sacrifice](#)

[Chapter 6 - Support Ship Ideal](#)

[Chapter 7 - The One Who Works Behind the Scenes](#)

[Chapter 8 - Sky Pirates Flag](#)

[Chapter 9 - Conquest Target vs Conquest Target](#)

[Chapter 10 - The User](#)

[Chapter 11 – Leon](#)

[Chapter 12 - The Truth About the House of Lespinasse](#)

[Epilogue](#)

[Extra Story - Aaron-chan](#)

[Afterword](#)

[Short Story – Marie Route The Fourth](#)

Prologue

Betrayal's always happen suddenly.

An expected betrayal is neither frightening, nor painful.

But traitors usually look for the best moment to betray you.

That's what's happening right now!

"Leon, if you don't explain properly, you'll get a 'no'."

Olivia had her neck bent over quite a bit, but her eyes were open.

Her eyes released a pressure not allowing me to lie.

In front of those eyes, I, Leon Fou Bartford, was shaking.

I opened my mouth to give an excuse but my throat was so dry I couldn't say anything.

I was very nervous.

"C-calm down, both of you. Let's talk. That way we can resolve any misunderstandings."

Besides, this is a trap set by that damn Luxion!

Needless to say, my words didn't hold any weight to them. Angie, Angelica Rafa Redgrave, was looking at a baby cot that was in the corner of the room. She touched the crib with her hands and smiled. But that smile gave me goosebumps. She's angry. She's furious.

If I had to describe the emotions of Angie right now, would the perfect analogy be that of a volcano *before* eruption? Or is she about to explode right now?

"It would be better for you to think carefully about your next words in

order to make sure your excuse is reliable. Of course, I mean the excuse you'll give us about why you would be bringing another woman to this house prepared by the Republic for your studies here, and even have a baby cot."

"L-let me explain my current situation."

As I could not stay forever in Marie's house, I decided to return to the house they had prepared for me.

Right now, we have the priestess chosen by the sacred tree, Noelle Bertre, under our care. Her real name is Noelle Zel Lespinasse. As the priestess's guardian, I decided to bring her home to protect her.

I did not have any other intentions, I swear! I just wanted to protect her from the idiots of the Republic.

Noelle, the new priestess, is now someone desired—

and not for good intentions—by all the nobles of the Republic. That's why I have to keep her safe, the best path to take was to keep her close to me. She herself understands that and desires it, so up to here, there is no problem.

"I'm not making any excuses."

Noelle lowered her head.

She had beautiful blond hair, a hairstyle with a single side tail with pink tips. She was a little ashamed in front of Livia and Angie.

"I-I apologize, everything is my fault. It's my fault for letting it happen.

."

The more reserved Noelle became, Livia and Angie's eyes turned fiercer. That's why I need to stop Noelle before things get out of control.

"C-calm down a little Noelle, ok? Let me talk to them, I will explain everything"

I'm so afraid that I'm stuttering!

I'm not being unfaithful, I've been put in this situation by accident! In this situation, it's hard to deny it, too!

The two came to my house at the worst possible time.

Both saw the moment I was embracing Noel, and yes, looking at it without context, it seemed without a doubt like cheating. Not to mention the baby cot that is in this room.

A short time after I arrived in the Republic, I got a new friend named Jean, and because of several circumstances, I ended up taking care of his beloved dog for a while.

However, it was a very old dog and needed special care, so I bought a baby cot for her to sleep. The only problem is... that the name of that dog was Noelle.

Having the same name as the girl by my side, made this situation even more complicated. That is why, in the eyes of Angie and Livia, I had not only brought a girl to my house in the Republic, but I even had prepared a baby cot.

Assuming, just assuming we had 10 people watching this, the only possible outcome would be that 10 of those 10 come to the conclusion that I was being unfaithful. In fact, if someone else was in my position, I would even think the same.

But seriously, I wasn't being an adulterer.

The situation came to this because of Luxion's betrayal.

Normally, in this type of situation, my fiancé's would definitely not be here to witness this scene. In that case, why did it end like that?

Conclusion: It was because of Luxion.

I tried to use 100% of my brain to find the most optimal solution in this case. Okay, I do not have to worry about this. I'm somehow insecure, but

if I speak with a stern expression, I'm sure both will understand me.

"Girls.. think about this carefully. It's not true, but assuming that I really am cheating, wouldn't you find this setting truly weird? "

At the time I said that "it is not true", I felt as if Angie's and Livia's eyes released an even colder aura than before. My back couldn't stop sweating neither could I stop shaking.

"Weird? Would you stop trying to change the topic?"

Angie's voice was cruelly cold. I swear on my manhood from now on, no matter what happens, I will never cheat on her. I must not make her angrier. That was what my mind, my heart.. no, what my soul itself understood on this occasion.

"It's certainly strange."

"Livia?" Angie stopped looking at me and turned to Livia. It seems that she did manage to understand what I tried to say.

"Leon-san did not even go to welcome us this time when we came to sightseeing the Republic of Alzer again. Last time we didn't let him know and he went to receive us anyway, right?"

"Well, because Luxion should have notified him, right? .. ah, I understand." Apparently Angie already understood. Finally they got what I wanted to say.

"If he had something to hide, he would have had time to hide all the evidence, but if not, it's because Luxion did not notify him, I see".

Luxion is usually specific and noisy with his reports, but this time he had not said anything. Basically, he clearly betrayed me!

Livia nodded and then continued talking about what seemed strange to her.

"Also, Claire-chan was acting a little strange lately. If Leon-san had something to hide, he would have told her to gain time for him, don't you

think? If there is really evidence, I don't think he would have left it to be exposed."

Yes, exactly! Normally, some of those two would have informed me about this before. Both of them are extremely skilled, so they would have helped me with wiping out the evidence of my infidelity.. . obviously, it's not like I really need to hide something. Yes, I have not been unfaithful!

"Can't you see?! This is clearly a betrayal from those two damn AI's!"

It seems that the worst part had already passed after both of them reached the answer alone. This is the power of love!

When I finally had time to breathe, the woman with glasses who was seeing everything from behind on the room, murmured. ". . but that does not change the fact that Leon-sama was playing intimately in this room with Noelle-sama."

"T-this woman is a..."

Her name was Cordelia Fou Easton. A trusted maid that Angie had sent to help me on my daily tasks. In truth, I believed that she was a reasonable and cool maid, but it seems that she was another traitor.

Wait a moment. Is it just me, or there are lots of traitors around me?

Angie glared at me again. Her gaze that had smoothed a little before, turned cold once more.

"In that case, would that mean that Luxion wanted to give a lesson to his condescending master?"

Then Livia supported the new theory of Angie. "That's possible. I guess he wanted to put Leon-san in a tightening situation, so that Leon-san stops having fun and taking advantage of his freedom."

"Luxion is quite filial. Leon, you must be happy to have a servant who cares so much to straighten his master towards the right path. ."

"T-that is not quite true. ."

This is not going well. I thought about several things I could say which may change the flow of these events, but my body doesn't react.

I looked everywhere looking for someone who would be willing to help me, and in the end my eyes ended up falling with all my hopes on Yumeria-san.

Would she notice?

Maybe yes, because even in the middle of this heavy atmosphere, Yumeria-san took a breath and exclaimed.

"I.. I think Leon-sama is also a man, so we should forgive him, even if he fell to temptations!"

. .and her words threw more fuel to the fire.

If I had to describe this situation, it would be represented by a bomb about to fall into the fire. With this, it seems that I have really been being unfaithful.

Yumeria-san did notice that and began to try to amend her mistake.

"T-that's not what I wanted to say! I mean that perhaps he took his jokes a little too far, but.. well, I.. I mean Leon-sama has eyes only for you two!

Umm?..

Shouldn't it be only for one?.."

Certainly, if we talk about what is normal and what is not, having 2 fiancées at the same time is nothing normal. While I thought about that, the situation became much worse.

Besides, this war was already a loss. No matter what I or Noelle would say, Livia and Angie will not believe us.

Also, Cordelia-san was not interested in meddling, obviously she didn't bother with helping Yumeria-san to clarify herself. Not to mention that

the artificial intelligences that should be helping in this case, Luxion and Cleare, had fled somewhere, it is very likely that they have set me up. No, in fact, it's already a fact that they betrayed me.

"I knew it, people should not trust artificial intelligences."

Among all the things that human beings have built, artificial intelligences are always the most susceptible to betray them.

Apparently, Luxion was not the exception. He betrayed me! I definitely won't forgive you, I will not forgive anyone from the two!

"Luxion, do you listen to me? I know you did it.

Remember that we, the humans, always end up on top!

So I hope you are ready!"

I said it out loud while laughing at the end to Luxion, who surely was watching this from somewhere else.

Now, the only thing I could possibly do was laugh. If I did not, I might possibly end up crying. Seeing me laughing at nothing, Noel was left surprised while Cordelia-san felt repulsion. But what really dealt a blow on me was Yumeria-san's face who was really worried about me.

"Leon-sama, don't snap, return to yourself! Everything will be fine, I'm sure everything will be solved!"

What is going to be fine? Doesn't matter, thanks for the concern anyway. I love that kindness that you exude. After seeing me laughing without control, Livia and Angie took each of my arms and gripped me.

Anyone who saw this without context, would say that I have two beautiful flowers, one in each hand, but in reality, they were preventing me from fleeing. Both had empty smiles on their faces. From my arm you could hear the sound of my fiancées tightening them.

"Leon-san, it's better to tell us everything.. if not, you will be treated like a bad kid."

"Ready to tell us everything? It will be better if you brace yourself, we have all the time in the world so I will not let you sleep."

That "I will not let you sleep" would have made me feel embarrassed and even excited if she had said it in another situation.

Yes, if she had said it in a normal situation!

And so, both took me out of the room, dragging me from both hands.

Then, Noel extended her hand towards me. "Leon?!" I turned my face, yes, just my face and tried to smile with all my remaining forces to reassure her.

"Do not worry Noelle, I'm sure they will understand me after explaining everything."

I am innocent. I have not been unfaithful. That is why Livia and Angie will understand me.

Yes, if they just let me talk-

"Leon-san, this time you have been a bad kid!"

They surely will...

"I should have lectured you a little more about relationships with girls before letting you come here. I will not tell you to don't have fun, but from now on, you'll have to do it knowing what will be waiting for you."

.. Will I make it back alive?

"Luxion, why did you betray me?" While both of them took me from the arm, I shrugged my shoulders and looked at the ground. As if I were a newly caught criminal. But I swear I have not been cheating!

I have not done anything wrong!



In the Academy of the Republic of Alzer, the summer vacation had already begun.

There was a girl who took advantage of those vacations to enter a dungeon. She was Leila Bertre.

She had pink hair with a hairstyle similar to Noelle, a single-sided tail, but on the opposite side of her.

Both were twins so they seemed quite alike, however, they had some clear differences. One of them, and the most important thing, is that Noelle's younger sister, Leila, is a reincarnator.

"Here, it's right here. I know, I have seen it before."

Right now, she had a backpack on her back and her clothes were dirty with mud. In her hand, she carried a pick.

From her appearance it is obvious that she has gone through a lot to get to this place. It seemed that she had to endure more than she expected from how rough she was breathing.

Seeing her like that, his companion, Serge Sara Rault, got a little worried.

"Hey, are you okay? You're not used to this, don't overwork yourself."

"Don't worry. It will be fine once we arrive. ."

"Ummm.. though, I'm surprised you have known about this kind of place."
"

Serge was a boy with a slightly tanned skin, and black hair combed backwards. He was tall and fit with well defined muscles. In short, someone totally contrary to Leila's fiancé, Emil Laz Plevén. But there was a reason why Leila decided to search within this dungeon with Serge.

Serge scanned his surroundings, everything was covered by roots of the sacred tree. The roots were stuck and spread around all the metallic walls.

After that, they came to what seemed to be a passage, but the door placed behind did not open. First, because the door itself was broken, and second, because the roots of the sacred tree filled the area.

Serge took a lantern and started looking around.

"I never thought that there was a dungeon like this under the sacred tree. Leila, isn't this a great discovery?"

The two were in a dungeon that was very beneath the sacred tree. In short, they were underground. Leila was drinking water from her bottle and then cleaned her mouth with her sleeve. At this moment, she didn't even have the leisure to worry about her appearance.

"Don't tell anyone, it would be troublesome if someone else decides to come to explore. Also.. Serge, are you listening to me?" Leila glared at Serge who was looking at her with a smile. But Serge just laughed.

"Don't be like that. I just thought that you're a fantastic woman."

"What?"

What is he babbling about in this situation?

Leila did not know how to react, but Serge gave another step. He walked until he was in front of Leila.

"I mean you're fantastic the way you are now."

"I know I don't have manners." Said Leila annoyed, thinking that Serge was making fun of her. However, on her inner thoughts, she was already thinking what was the next thing she needed to do.

Leon, found Luxion in the Kingdom of Holfort, so there should also be one here.

Like how Leon found Luxion in the Kingdom of Holfort, there should be another powerful item in the second game. A pay to win item equal to Luxion.

There must be one. If there is none, I'll be in trouble..

I will not have anything to go against Leon and the others.

Leila was afraid of Leon, who had a powerful weapon on his hands. If Luxion attacks seriously, if it is an order from Leon, he would destroy the Republic along with the whole continent without sparing a second thought.

When Leila learned about that, she could not stand still waiting to be slaughtered.

That's why she decided to go into this dungeon in order to find her own powerful weapon. But, as expected, she couldn't do it alone. However, she could get up to this point thanks to the help of Serge, who wasn't just another noble but an adventurer.

Leila continued to walk through a dark corridor. Many times she almost fell due to tree branches, but every time, Serge caught her before she reached the floor.

"Do you want to rest?"

"I-I'm fine. There's not much left, let's continue a little more."

The object was just in front of her. Little by little, she had reminded all the information from the second game she had possessed.

A little more. Yes, it should be just behind this door.

Both of them arrived in front of a humongous door.

Leila approached it and entered a password on the control panel.

Luckily, I have the password.

After entering the digits that she had remembered after squeezing her brain dry, the door reacted. The automatic door opened, and on the other side was an immensely spacious room.

Serge was looking at Leila surprised.

"How did you know the way to open this door?"

"I have some secrets. Forget about that, now, walk."

Leila pointed the lantern to the room which was full of tree roots.

It's broader than the one that was shown in the game according to my memories.

After that, Leila began to look for an airship. . No, a spaceship. This huge room was actually a dock. In the past, it was here where the old human civilization kept their weapons.

At this moment, it was already abandoned and filled with broken futuristic ships. But Serge got really excited.

"Leila, this is awesome! If we report that we found this, our names will go down in history!"

In addition to discovering a new ruin, they had also discovered ancient objects. Serge was excited and happy to be the adventurer who had achieved that. But Leila doesn't.

"You haven't seen anything yet. Follow me".

Serge obeyed and walked to Leila who advanced before him, and, arriving almost to the end of the passage, she suddenly noticed something.

She pointed the lantern to a corner of the room, and there she realized that a weapon had ended up buried here.

Something with a humanoid figure, strongly tied by tree roots.

"Is this. . an armor?" She did not see that in the game.

Although, it may be some other pay to win item and she simply does not remember having seen it before.

Of course, Leila didn't get too interested in the weapons from the second game. In fact, she considered that the adventurers and weapons were just for the sake of making the plot advance. And while she was immersed in her thoughts, Serge approached the armor.

"It does not look bad. The bad thing is that it has been cut down perfectly. The guy who had piloted this should have died ipso facto."

Leila found herself afraid as soon as she heard that.

The soul of the pilot may still be wandering around here. Following this line of thought, she felt as if this place was a graveyard.

"S-stop fooling around!"

"It looks good, can we bring it with us? Although it is completely black and broad. I believe the armors from ancient times were always like that, though this one is also huge."

It was bigger than the traditional armor of this world.

Facing this armor, Leila immediately remembered another quite similar.

". .Umm? This one and that 'Arroganz' look pretty alike."

"Arroganz? I think I've heard that word before. It means. . Arrogance, right? "

"Huh? You kidding?" By hearing the meaning of

'Arroganz', Leila didn't know what to feel towards Leon.

Is that guy a chuuni? Who the heck would call his own armor arrogance?

She thought about that while looking at the armor trapped in the middle of the tree branches. Then, Leila got goosebumps.

W-what the hell!

. .This armor utterly scared her.

She was about to take a step back in fear, but Serge became even more intrigued by it.

"Leila, let me take this boy. I'll have it as a souvenir if I'm not able to repair it." But Leila immediately rejected Serge's suggestions. It's not that she had a special reason, but her instincts were screaming that she wouldn't get into that armor.

"Of course we won't! Come on, walk".

"Wait, don't be like that!" She took Serge from the arm and advanced.

Serge wanted to resist for a moment, but immediately calmed down. They both walked out holding hands.

Then, they found a huge spaceship with an ominous presence. It had a simple shape and a geometric design, though a part was trapped between roots. The color, apparently, was dark green. Unlike the other spaceships around there, this one has been left intact and doesn't seem to be others.

Serge was watching that spaceship with a dumbfounded face.

"I did not think it was possible for a airship to be crafted that big, not even in ancient times."

While he was flabbergasted, Leila lost interest in him and immersed herself again in her own thoughts.

No, this is a spaceship. . or rather, a space vessel She tried to remember a little more about what to do from now on from the game, but her memories were still vague. The spaceships of ancient times . .those were aircrafts with high performance on delivering supplies and also perfect for battles. Their capacities were far above what the ones of the current era could manage, and judging by the dimensions from the one in front of her, it could be said that it was as outstanding as Luxion.

With this I will not lose against Leon.

Leila started walking, leaving back Serge who was still spacing out. As he realized that she was leaving him behind, Serge pursued her. But suddenly, Serge ran towards her and pulled one of her hands to put her behind him.

"There's something approaching from behind!"

"Huh? W-what?"

Everything was so fast that Leila couldn't process it.

In less than an instant, Serge was already fighting with the monsters that had appeared with his own hands.

The monsters were crushed on the ground and became black smoke and then disappeared.

Isn't this guy just slaughtering them? Isn't this a little too one sided Serge was killing some of the monsters with his bare right hand. While the other hand held a spear, which swung in a perfect circular shape, killing the monsters around him. He seemed to be quite confident in front of the monsters.

"So nine of them, I see. Leila, you stay back".

"C-can you defeat them all?" Serge held his spear with a fancy pose, wanting to show his reliable side to Leila.

"A piece of cake!"

Then he began an unilateral fight. Serge swung his spear, and with each cut, a monster fell, defeated.

Serge always admired the adventurers, that's why he trained a lot and became a warrior who could even be matched with his other self with the best specs he could achieve on the game.

That is why he could easily defeat all the monsters that showed up.

Leila felt a bit disgusted after she saw the destroyed heads of the

monsters that Serge had defeated with his spear. However, for her it was more than

enough having Serge to take care of those monsters similar to flying sharks.

After all, she could not do it alone.

It was a good idea to bring Serge with me. He's stronger than I had expected. He might even be stronger than Leon and those idiots.

The Kingdom of Holfort was the home of the adventurers, for that reason, Leon and his group had a certain degree of skill. But for Leila, Serge did not fall behind. Moreover, he seemed so reliable in front of her.

Who would have thought that Serge was such an adept fighter.

"And this is the last one!" Said Serge after leaving all the monsters beheaded. And after checking that there were no more monsters, he lowered his spear.

Leila thanked Serge, looking at him with great surprise and a bit of interest.

"You are strong, now I see you under a new light!"

"Well no one would survive in this kind of place without being able to do at least this much. Have you already fallen in love with me?"

"No, not even a single bit, but at least I consider you a completely different person now. Thank you for protecting me, Serge."

Both of them joked, and little by little, the uncomfortable environment started fading away. Then, Serge saw the supply ship again and began to think in silence, so Leila asked him.

"Is there something wrong?"

"Well, I thought that this treasure is amazing, but I get the feeling that it was a little too easy up to now."

"And what about the fights we had so far? You can't even imagine how many times I thought I was going to die on the way here!" For Leila, who was not used to adventures, it could even be considered a great achievement reaching her destination without dying in fear without leaving a body.

But to Serge, who was already accustomed to this, it seemed too lacking.

"In fact I was surprised that we arrived here after walking in a straight line. Did you already know that there was a treasure around here?"

If I answer yes, he surely will get curious about how I knew it. After reaching that conclusion, Leila decided to make an excuse.

"I didn't think that there would really be something here. . I just heard rumors in the past." She acted as if she was genuinely surprised, and then

she focused on the ship to avoid Serge's gaze. At that moment, the door opened by itself.

Unlike the previous door, it was slowly and silently.

Then, from the other side, emerged a floating sphere as big as a softball, with a single red eye. The object stayed still at the same height of Leila and Serge's view. Everything was so unexpected, that Serge didn't need to think twice about raising again his spear and pulling back Leila at the same time.

With his spear in hand, he shouted at Leila to stay back.

"Leila, stay back!"



However, Leila was relieved. That was because the sphere in front of them was not Luxion. . it was another blue drone.

"Serge, calm down. We'll be fine."

"R-really?"

Serge lowered his spear a bit, staring at the blue robot's movements.

Leila was convinced that the thing in front of them had no bad intentions.

That was because, if he was an old Luxion's companion, then he could not fight in that form.

"I want to have a talk with you." She said and then the blue robot responded with a lively voice.

"It has been a while since the last time I received visits." It was a robotic voice, but somehow masculine.

The difference with Luxion is that this robot felt much more human than the first one.

Serge was surprised, but Leila continued talking.

"I want this ship. Give me the rights of ownership."

She said with a haughty attitude and the robot responded with intrigue.

"Do you want to be my master? . .Umm, there are several things that I find shady about you and your request, but the truth is I can't stand being waiting in this place for so long, but I can not move without permission. So a master appearing is a very tempting situation!"

Why would this new human know about his existence and the rights of a master? The robot seemed intrigued about that, but more than that, he wanted to leave this place as soon as possible, so he had accepted gladly.

Meanwhile, Serge got really worried about that conversation.

"Leila, are you sure about this? What is that thing in the first place?"

But who answered Serge's question wasn't Leila

"—Oops, I forgot to introduce myself, I apologize for my rudeness! My name is 'Ideal', a ship in charge of supplies." Leila released a small sigh. A sigh of relief.

Good, it has the same name as the one I bought on the game.

The name of the powerful pay to win on the second otome game was Ideal. That's why she was convinced that this powerful weapon was the same drone she had encountered before. So, Leila took a step forward confidently.

"In that case, let's do it immediately."

"How do you know about the privileges of ownership?

The truth is that I'm really intrigued and something seems fishy, but it's okay. Let's move forward to the next topic for now."

The blue drone, Ideal, turned his red eye brighter and scanned both of them. Then Ideal began to wander around Leila making circles quite intrigued.

"What happened?"

"I got very shocking information. It seems that today will be a great day. "

"You think so?"

By seeing Luxion, she thought that this other AI would respond with a much more lack of emotions, but for the moment, it was quite friendly.

In addition, his attitude towards Leila, who would be recorded as his master, was adequate.

"It seems that you both are really tired. I'll prepare a room, so go on, you

can enter," said Ideal, entering ahead to guide them, leaving the two of them shocked once inside the ship.

It was in a pretty clean state. Serge was surprised while passing a hand on the wall beside him.

"It's the first time I see a lost item kept so clean and well-conserved".

Having Serge's words picked his interest, Ideal turned towards Leila and asked.

"Lost item? Well, in the current era, the technology that was used to build me should have been lost. It seems that it will be fun to take a walk. "

"Fun? Can you even feel that being an artificial intelligence?"

Leila was flabbergasted by the fact that Ideal was really impatient to get outside.

". .yeah, you're really intriguing people." Said Ideal in front of both of them, and then returned to guide them.

Then Serge said. "Hey Leila. . What is that artificial intelligence thing you mentioned before?"

Leila sworn inside her mind after hearing that question.

Damn, I left my guard down.

"I-it is nothing. We should take the offer of that thing and rest a little bit here."

"You're right. Though I was a little worked up about exploring the inside of this ship."

Serge sounded seriously excited, with his gaze looking around the entire place.

Then, Leila looked at the floating sphere that was in front of her.

I got it, I finally got my own cheat item. With this I won't have to fear Leon.

That's what brought Leila the most happiness, much more than having gotten this kind of lost item.

"Wait a moment please".

Ideal took them to the room, which was more like the resting area of a company. There was some furniture, vending machines and even decoration plants. Serge sat directly on the couch without taking away the dirt on his clothes.

"This couch is amazing. Leila, come sit."

"Seriously you're like a barbarian. But yes, you're right." Leila sat down and relaxed her shoulders to alleviate the pent up fatigue.

After that, Ideal went to some other place, leaving them the both alone in the room.

"If you excuse me, I will take my leave"

"Where do you have to go?"

"I will make some preparations to go outside. Also, I will bring you some food in a moment." Ideal left and Serge smiled.

"What a thoughtful guy."

But, is there something to eat in a place like this that was abandoned so many years ago. While Leila was wondering about that, her gaze was obstructed by Serge. Then, he brought his face near to hers.

"W-wait!" She quickly tried to cover her face with both hands, but Serge grabbed one of them. Serge's look was serious.

". .Leila, why did you get engaged with the weakling of Emil Family?"

Leila felt a little awkward hearing him asking that. That's because she knew that Serge was madly in love with her.

"This doesn't have anything to do with you, you were never at school, so

we could never hang out too much.

Do you have any problems with that?"

Leila already knew what Serge wanted to say.

"You know what I feel for you, right? Leila . . I love you, you're the only woman I love."

Those were straight words coming from his heart.

However, Leila looked away.

I love you? There is no more empty phrase than that.

thought Leila, rejecting the confession after remembering a little about her past self.

". .you made me wait too much. I am already with Emil."

She got up and then moved away from Serge, but he didn't give up.

Serge grabbed Leila's shoulders and brought them close to him.

"I swear I'll make you happy. I want you to stay with me."

When she saw Serge so serious, she doubted for a moment . . but in the end, she pushed him aside with her hands.

"Serge, stop joking. Also, you are a son of the Rault house, do you get it? We are not fit for each other."

"And what of it matters?! The same is with Emil. I-I'm only-"

Unfortunately, the door opened again and Ideal entered interrupting their discussion and with a cheerful voice said

"~It has been some time since I prepared a meal. But don't worry, I've made sure to keep the ingredients well preserved, so everything is in perfect condition.

Although, in fact, I can produce many things inside this ship, so there are more than enough ingredients! ..

Mmh? Did I come with a bad timing?"

Ideal came back right after Leila rejected Serge's confession, but thanks to that Leila was able to change the topic.

Leila walked away from Serge and then crossed her arms.

"Nothing happened".

I don't understand. Can an artificial intelligence have emotions?

Thought Leila, after seeing Ideal unable to read the atmosphere.

Chapter 1 - Unusable Trash

"-That's how it is. It is true that Master was taking care of a dog named Noelle and then saved Noelle Beltre.

Don't worry, he doesn't have the courage to cheat on you."

We were at my house.

Luxion had come to help me, who was being interrogated by Angie and Livia who had no light in their eyes.

They interrogated me for an hour.

This is all Luxions fault.

Angie put her hand on her waist and sighed.

"-We rushed into a conclusion. Leon, please forgive us.

We were wrong."

Livia hugged me.

"I'm sorry, Leon. You weren't fooling us. I feel terrible for doubting you."

I decided to accept their apologies with a big heart.

"It's okay. I was also to blame for incurring suspicion.

But you two, I will never forgive you."

Luxion and Claire were in my line of sight.

They were both avoiding me.

Luxion was carefree.

"That's quite short-minded of you, master. To not forgive your

followers."

Clare looked somewhat happy.

"It's true! It's your fault for acting so suspicious! If we didn't follow up with this, the misunderstanding could not be resolved. Even so, it is resentful of you to never forgive us."

Is that all these fucking traitors have to say?

"Don't play with me. If you hadn't betrayed me from the start, Angie and Livia wouldn't have doubted me in the first place!"

"Looking at you from the side, I think it is inevitable for your actions to be suspicious, Master."

Angie was convinced of Luxion's opinion.

"Yes. If you hear something about stealing a bride from a wedding, you can't help but hesitate."

"No. That was not stealing. I just stopped an unhappy wedding."

Hearing my excuse, Angie tried to say something, but she didn't have her usual urge to respond since she had some fault for having suspected me.

"I sympathize with Noelle's case, so I don't blame you for saving her..."

But what are you going to do? Leon, are you thinking about the future?"

When we were talking about Noelle's treatment, I put my finger on my cheek.

I didn't think about it too much and it's not something I need to decide.

"It is Noelle who must decide."

It seems that Angie was not satisfied with my response.

"If the story of the Holy Tree priestess is true, we should bring her home."

The Sacred Tree... this is an existence that supplies energy to people.

Is it good to say that it is clean and free energy?

A great plant that solves energy problems.

And in my hand, there was a sapling that grew from that Sacred Tree.

Fortunately, the sapling chose its priestess.

If we return to our hometown and plant the sapling of the Sacred Tree, the Kingdom of Holfort will not suffer from power problems in the future.

Considering Angie's position, it was inevitable to choose to bring Noelle home.

However, Livia is not convinced of it.

"W-Wait! What are we going to do with Noelle's will?

Noelle has not yet given an answer, correct? There are doubts, right?"

She said that Noelle's will should be respected.

Angie's and Livia's opinions were in direct conflict.

Angie tried to reason with Livia.

"I'm sorry for Noelle, but the power problem will be solved in the future. This is no longer an individual problem. I know that it is unfortunate for Noelle, but in the future she will solve one of the kingdom's key problems... I am sorry, but I don't want to give Noelle a choice."

I could understand Angie's feeling of wanting to take her home.

Not having any more energy problems is a pretty good thing.

However, Livia was not convinced.

Even when the benefits were presented to her, she was emotionally

opposed.

"That's not good. Noelle won't be happy. And does Noelle even have a choice to stay here or come to the kingdom? Bringing her in by force is unforgivable."

"I'm sorry if I said it wrong. Then we will treat Noelle with the utmost consideration. If Noelle wants, we'll let her have a luxurious life."

"Is not that! It's not like that! What's the matter with you, Angie? You don't act like you usually do. The Angie I know would never choose to use Noelle as a sacrifice."

They both began to gradually get upset.

Angie got emotional too.

"If a sacrifice saves many in the future. . my choice will be for the majority. I never said that we wouldn't make Noelle happy."

Faced with the highest consideration Angie could give, Livia still wasn't convinced.

"Noelle is not a tool!"

Surely Angie couldn't forgive herself seeing Noelle as a tool.

Angie was a bit shocked.

It seems that she was aware of what she said herself.

"It is true that I saw her as a tool. If it wasn't Leon that brought this incredible story then even I would have doubted. ...but now that I know, I am ready to take Noelle back to the kingdom. Leon, help me too."

When Angie asked for my consent, Livia grabbed my arm.

She gave me a sad look.

D-Don't look at me like that.

“Leon, please stop Angie. This is not good. Will this make you happy even if you treat Noelle like a tool?”

“H-huh...”

As I wandered, Angie grabbed my other arm.

“Leon, you are an Earl of the kingdom of Holfort. You have an obligation to protect these people. I know that you don't want to take responsibility, but I won't let you run away from this.”

Livia was looking from the individual's perspective.

And Angie was looking at the whole.

Livia wanted Noelle's happiness and Angie wanted to sacrifice it so that many others would be happy.

...Wait, should I choose? Should I decide something this important!?

It was Luxion who came to my rescue when I was in trouble.

“If Master accepts Noelle, the whole problem will be solved.”

This artificial intelligence loves to add fuel to the fire.

“I hate that part of you where you ignore feelings.”

“Oh? I don't want to hear that from my Master, who ignored Noelle's feelings. If you accept Noelle, she will be happy, Master. Furthermore, the Kingdom of Holfort will also have the sacred tree and they will be happy.

Everything fits perfectly.”

Where!? Where is my happiness in all that!?

“If I accept it, everything will fit perfectly, that . . h-huh? Angie, what is it?”

Angie was downcast and thinking a lot.

She slowly raised her face and looked into my eyes.

“What Luxion said isn't a bad suggestion. Leon...
accept Noelle.”

At what Angie said, Livia shook her head.

“Angie, why? Why do you say that even though you were against Leon
cheating on us.”

Seeing Livia with a look that she couldn't believe, Angie looked away.

“...because it's worth it. Leon, you can dismiss me. So accept Noelle.”

Seeing Angie muttering that to convince me, I...

decided to run away from that place.

“I-I don't want to.”

“Leon?”

“I absolutely don't want to! I don't want to break up with Angie!”

When I screamed and jumped out of the room, I heard Livia's voice.

“Leon!?”

◇

“Wasn't it terrible to leave them both in the room?”

I jumped out of the house and headed to Marie's mansion with Luxion.

“How annoying. And it won't change the fact that you've betrayed me.

Ah~ah, as I thought, artificial intelligence is a dangerous existence that
will betray humanity.”

“I will not betray humanity. However, new humanity is another matter.”

Isn't that the same as saying you'll betray us?

"Damn traitor."

"If you're worried about Noelle, you should put her on your side."

"What does that have to do with your betrayal?"

I don't want to experience their suspicion again.

Still, this guy's changing the topic this time is too suspicious.

Did he really think of betraying me?

"Let's be serious. ...Luxion, why did you create that situation, to even include bothering Clare?"

"You realized? You are quite insightful, Master."

You are a guy who likes to say annoying things like always.

Listening this time, prioritize the main theme.

"Don't divert the topic."

"Unfortunately, Noelle will not have a peaceful future.

So we should choose a way beneficial to us while fulfilling your wishes."

"We should, huh."

"If you accept Noelle, the kingdom will get the Sacred Tree. At the moment, it may not be so mighty like the Republic Holy Tree, but it will solve the power problem in the future. That's a huge benefit!"

"About the future, humans will take care of that. Tell the truth."

"It is true. In other words.. Noelle has no freedom. If her value is known, not only will the kingdom move but other countries as well. Master, you won't be able to protect Noelle if she's not by your side."

Luxion was listing the reasons, but each one sounded like a lie.

“Was that your true intention?”

“You still doubt me? Then, I would like to say it clearly. If other countries pursue Noelle, they will take all possible measures. That is the end you will regret, Master. It would still be lucky if it's just an unwanted marriage. In the worst case, they will brainwash her and treat her as a tool.”

The sapling of the Sacred Tree and the priestess Noelle, other countries surely wish to have it in their hands.

I understand it, but do you have to point it out?

“Is it not possible to protect Noelle in the Republic?

She is their priestess.”

“Oh? Do you still believe in the Republic, even though you've been pestering them?”

Since I came to the Republic, I have been pestering the six great nobles.

Pierre, who has used the power of the six main nobles and used it for himself.

Loic who forced Noelle to marry him in order to obtain her.

They were certainly annoying people.

They've all screwed with me in so many ways, but how would they move if I wasn't there?

“She was selected as a priestess, but it's terrible that she can't be happy.

I thought the game had a happy ending.”

I complained.

In this otome game, Noelle, who was selected as a priestess, should have been happy.

To be united with a boy who likes and to revive his house that was in ruins....

And yet, what about Noelle now?

She doesn't belong to anyone and she's not happy either.

"Luxion, what went wrong?"

"Is Noelle not as happy as the story says?"

"...It was us. No, it's my fault?"

Was it possible that she can't be happy because we came to the Alzer Republic? I had that worry.

"As always you are too self-aware. Aren't you saying you have a lot of influence on the world, Master? Do you think the world revolves around you?"

"Do you hate me? Do you throw discordant words at the heart and think nothing of doing it? I am your Master, right?"

"It's okay because your heart is as hard as steel."

"It's a crystal heart! It is delicate! Be more careful!"

"You should look up the word delicate in a dictionary.

Apparently you remember the word delicate in a different sense, Master."

What a maddening guy.

You talk badly to me and you betray me.

The artificial intelligence of the world of this otome game is too cruel!

When I arrived at Marie's mansion while talking to Luxion, the entrance was noisy.

“What happened?”

I looked inside and saw Marie holding her head.

I could also see Jilk in trouble.

When Luxion confirmed the conversation, a surprising fact was revealed.

“Oh, it looks like Jilk started scamming people.

Judging from the content of the conversation, it was an event from when they were fired by Marie.”

“Hey!?”

I was surprised to hear that Jilk was a scammer and was making money.

Then Marie, who was holding her head at the front door, ran towards us.

“Onii-channnn!”

While trying to catch Marie, who was crying and jumped on me, I felt a strong shock in my abdomen from the impact.

“Ugh!?”

Receiving a tackle from Marie, she collided with my stomach and brought me down to my knees.

Marie, hugging me like that and crying, explained the situation to me.

H-Hey, you should first apologize to me for just now.

“Jilk.... Jilk!”

“What happened to the conspiratorial bastard?”

When I managed to get up, Jilk came over.

“Marie, please listen!”

At that moment, Marie's face turned into a demon.

“You want me to listen to you!? Do you know what you did?! Who said you can make money deceiving others!”

While I was rubbing my stomach, I heard that Jilk ripped off several people while making money as an antique dealer.

“No, I didn't do it! At first I tried to do my business seriously, but nobody tried to buy items I tried to sell.

But then I started preparing items to look more appealing, but t-then the item was sold instantly.”

“Damn you bastard! This is called cheating!”

Marie grabbed Jilk's chest and swayed him violently from side to side.

I want to think that I am wrong to see that the trembling Jilk looked a bit happy.

However, the current problem is about the fraud that he did.

I thought this guy was rubbish I couldn't laugh at, but was he really rubbish?

Luxion also seems to have the lowest evaluation on Jilk among the fools.

“In the past, in a duel with you, he put a bomb on the armor. This guy has the biggest trash grade compared to the others.”

The five idiots are always shit, but the other four are better shits then you.

I want to laugh.

However, Jilk alone couldn't make me laugh.

Marie exhaled and released Jilk.

Marie fell to her knees, crying with her hands on the ground.

Then she screamed

"H-how many people do I have to apologize to by kneeling?"

Marie's tearful screams echoed around her.

When I saw Marie crying, I, as expected, felt a little sympathy.

"Why does she only attract useless guys?"

When I asked Luxion the response I got was spicy.

"Instead of attracting useless guys, do you make men useless instead?

Well the five idiots they were originally useless, so I guess both are true."

"You have no mercy."

"Is that so?"

Then, due to the commotion, the residents of the mansion appeared.

It was Julian who jumped, but he was wearing a twisted headband with an apron.

"Marie, what happened!?"

He could have jumped coming this way after hearing Marie's crying cry, but it's uncomfortable for the former heir, the prince, to wear a twisted headband and apron.

When Julian hugged Marie, Marie was crying and laughing at the same time.

So, Brad came out after.

He came over to us while hugging his dove friend and his rabbit friend.

"What happens? Hey? Why is Bartford here? Oh I see.

He must have felt lonely without me."

"Of course not."

I immediately cut off the narcissist's comments, and the next one to come out was Chris with a loincloth and holding a deck brush.

"I heard Marie cry, but what happened? Hmm?

Bartford, why are you here?"

Explaining it was troublesome.

Also, these guys have gotten more intense recently.

They seem to be having fun, but I doubt if they are actually okay.

Then Greg, who took off his jacket, came hopping up.

"Listen to Marie's voice... Baltfault, why are you here?"

It seems that everyone is interested in why I came.

However, that is not important now, so I briefly explained the current situation.

"It appears that Jilk has committed fraud. Marie was put in that state when she found out."

The four of them saw Marie laughing as she cried, and then their eyes drifted to Jilk.

Julian's eyes on Jilk were scornful.

"A man like you who said all the time that he wanted to compete with me works like a swindler?"

The other three were the same.

Brad was hugging the dove and rabbit with cold eyes on Jilk.

"It is impossible. A little, no, normally that's wrong."

Chris's glasses were glowing suspiciously.

"This man, I've thought about it before, but there are places where you

can choose any method."

Greg was exercising, his muscles were swollen.

—He is fragile and by not training his muscles, his personality is distorted.

I don't think that really has anything to do with it.

Julian entrusted Marie to me.

"Balfault, I entrust Marie to you."

"Hey? What will you do?"

"Jilk is my stepbrother. We grew up taking care of each other like siblings .. That's why I'll fix him."

Jilk's attitude!

Marie regained her sanity when she saw Jilk being carried away by the four.

"Hah!? Jilk!?"

"He was taken by Julian and the others. They will surely give him a sermon?"

Marie dropped her shoulders enormously.

She held her face with both hands.

"Why did you scam? It would have been better if you came back without making money like before."

"You're going through a hard time too."

Marie dreamed of a reverse harem and cajoling five nobles. . why would it be? She didn't look happy.



The destination I visited was a merchant's bakery who bought Jilk's works of art.

He was a great merchant with a great mansion.

Jilk, who scammed that person, must be a man born with an unpleasant talent.

The tense Marie was trembling.

"T-T-Today is a good day."

I came to see how she was apologizing, but Marie was nervous and useless.

Since it can't be helped. . It really can't be helped, I accompanied her.

Instead of Marie, I spoke to the business owner.

"I'm very sorry for the sudden visit."

"...I thought you might come one day."

Did you realize that the product you bought was fake?

However, the slim and tall owner seemed to be nervous somewhere in front of us.

"Um, actually..."

"I know."

"...Eh?"

When the owner instructed the person who appears to be a butler, he brought out the product that Jilk had sold, perhaps because he had prepared it in advance.

However, they are very polite.

I purposely put on gloves and gently placed the teacup on the table.

It seemed like a very expensive product, if you didn't know that it was actually fake.

In this case, I too could have been fooled.

However, the story went in an unexpected direction.

"This is the product you bought from Jilk?"

"...Yes."

The owner's eyes looking at the teacup looked very sad.

The butlers and servants around me look at us with some tension.

.....Something is wrong.

Despite being duped, he doesn't seem to be angry.

No, maybe you didn't realize that you were tricked?

When I noticed such a thing, it seems that Marie also guessed it from the surrounding atmosphere.

She was a little worried. But probably not by not being as trash as Jilk, Marie had opened her mouth to say it was false.

"E-Excuse me!"

"I know! you... you came to retrieve this article? It's just for this. I did not think that you could get it for such a price."

"Y-Yes. ... Huh?"

The owner's reaction was strange.

I decided to investigate.

"No, I'm not thinking of trying to get it back. Actually, I heard that an acquaintance is an antiquarian, I couldn't believe it and I came to see it."

"O-Oh! So it was like this?"

The owner was visibly released from the tension.

"I'm not familiar with art, but is that cup of tea an expensive item?"

When I looked at the cup of tea, the owner opened his eyes and explained to me.

"Of course! This is a product whose manufacturing tradition has fallen apart a few years ago. Five hundred years. I had some, but none remained in perfect condition. It's a masterpiece of the time and there are only so many items in perfect condition! I asked them to people who are familiar with this, but it was difficult for anyone to want to sell it to me!"

I saw the owner, who was very happy and proud of his collection, and I nodded with a smile.

Marie looked at me with an anxious look.

So I confirmed it with Luxion in a low voice.

"Is it real?"

"Yes."

Luxion's short reply confused me by not knowing what was happening.

I didn't show it to my face.

"Ahahaha, I was surprised that he was a good antique dealer. By the way, do you know other people with what business Jilk?"

Is this a coincidence?

As we listen to the next customer, we also talk about Jilk.

"Jilk is a great connoisseur even though he's young.

No, I can't say he's a connoisseur. Is it better to say that he has the talent to find the authentic? He is a genius!"

Are you praising Jilk, who has no good eye!?

Did he really have a talent?

The owner appreciated the cup of tea.

Then he showed a smile in front of me.

“Yet when I heard the Earl of Holfort coming, I wondered what would happen.”

“Me?”

“Yes. There are so many rumors out there, some of them were scandalous. I'm really anxious inside thinking that you would take back the product I bought.”

No, it was actually conveyed that he was impatient.

More importantly, what are those rumors about me?

“I am intrigued by my rumors.”

“It may not mean anything from me, but the earl is a gentleman.”

Me, a gentleman? Although I am trying to be like the Master, I am aware that I am immature.

Do I look like a gentleman? Well, what flattery.

However, I was glad and I was happy.

“You're good at flattering.”

“That's not true.”

The owner's face turned serious.

“...I envy the kingdom.”

He said nothing more, but I got the impression that he seems to have problems with the nobles of the Republic.

◇

After that, follow-up investigations were carried out, but there was no need for an apology.

They all said the following.

"Jilk is a genius! No, he is loved by the god of art!"

"What a great skill, to save a real treasure from a pile of garbage, he is the savior of the art!"

"I would have supported Jilk generously if he had been born in the Republic. I envy the kingdom."

Do you understand?

Jilk was the only person who believed that he had acted as a con man.

We, who returned to the mansion, held our heads.

"What the hell is going on? I didn't think everyone was going to praise us for Jilk's aesthetic sense."

As a result, I didn't have to deal with the fraud, and Marie was able to feel relieved.

"Does that guy really have a good eye?"

Worried about the mansion, Jilk came in with a beaten face.

Despite his painful appearance, he smiled proudly.

"Oh, isn't that the earl, who doesn't have a good eye for things, Bartford?"

"You're a nasty guy."

"Is it true? Still, it's troublesome how everyone jumps to quick conclusions. I found the items they wanted and I sold them at a reasonable price. It would be embarrassing if they call this a sin."

He said that, but what he sold... I can't consider it art.

However, all the customers who bought the product were satisfied.

I also confirmed it with Luxion, but it was all real.

I can't say it's a coincidence.

Jilk looked at me.

"Oh? Won't you apologize?"

"It's Julian and others who beat you. Also, I forgive you for using the bomb in the duel, you should be grateful."

"Well, let's leave it at that."

I shook my head to the side and showed a state of disappointment.

It's a damn bastard that irritates me.

However, it seems that Marie has noticed something here.

"Wait a minute... in other words, if Jilk prepares what others want, can he gather money?"

Seeing Marie's eyes twinkling, Jilk had a complicated look.

"No.. . Marie? I usually see real things. However, this time, I only prepared articles suitable for blind people."

"That's fine! Jilk, why didn't you do that until now?"

"W-Well..."

"It's not a scam if you sell something real! In other words, relying on Jilk's aesthetic sense, we will be fine in the future!"

Certainly, if you are successful, you can earn a lot of money.

In fact, Jilk is making a lot of money in a short period of time.

Jilk looked complicated, but couldn't seem to refuse when Marie told him her request.

He accepted Marie's suggestion.

"I understand you. If so, I will choose the appropriate product for Marie."

"I'm looking forward to it, Jilk!"

"Leave it to me. I'll show you how different I am from the other four."

It rose slightly more than the other four.

After all, this guy has a bad personality.

Chapter 2 – Serge

Lelia came back halfway through the winter break. She lived with her fiancé Emil, but she hadn't come back for a while, and was worried about him.

"What do you mean you're challenging a dungeon, L-Leila?!"

Emile's question was timid, and Leila acted disrespectful.

"I told you I was going to challenge one before the winter break."

"I never thought you were serious!"

From Emil's point-of-view, she was just excited for the break.

But, when he heard she was actually planning to, he was surprised.

"Why are you doing something so dangerous? —Why such a dangerous thing?"

"It's important business."

She couldn't tell Emil the details.

Therefore, her explanation was unconvincing. Ideal was watching the situation, by Leila's side.

He suddenly appeared.

"It's nice to meet you, Emil. My name is Ideal. I'm Lelia's spaceship in her service—oh you can't tell. "

"Huh, an airship? Even though it's so small?"

"Oh, my main unit is separate. I was picked up by Lelia and Serge-san.

I'm grateful for their help."

"—What? Serge was with you too?"

Seeing Ideal, who was talking flippantly, Lelia reached out to grab him.

"Hey, why did you come out?!"

"I thought I could clear up the misunderstandings."

"Bah! You idiot! I told you to stay hidden! Don't you remember my instructions?"

"Didn't you tell me to hide for one minute?"

"What's happening? Why are you with Serge?"

Emil raised his voice, to Lelia's surprise.

She hadn't expected the timid Emil to raise his voice.

"It's fine. I only asked for his help to conquer the dungeon."

"You didn't tell me you were with a man! Lelia, we're engaged now."

Lelia reminded herself of the fact that she rejected Serge in favor of Emil.

That's why she was even more angry at Emil for not believing her.

I refused Serge's advances, and you suspect me for cheating?!

"Nothing happened! Are you going to ask me this every time I do something? Are you jealous of your friend?"

"I'm not jealous. Why, of all people, is it Serge? You think I don't know what he thinks of you?"

"You don't believe me?"

Lelia squinted her eyes and Emil shook his shoulders.

"No, no that's not what I meant."

It's easy to push the weak Emil.

She thought that he would pull back if she talked to him sternly enough, but today he was resisting.

But that's all, Lelia thought.

"I don't want to talk about this anymore—okay?"

"Yeah, yeah."

Once Emil's problem was taken care of, she had to deal with Ideal.

"You too! From now on, don't appear in public without permission."

"I'm sorry for being careless."

Since he apologized quickly, Lelia couldn't pursue further.

"It was true my instructions were bad. I'll let you off this time. I'm going back to my room."

Lelia walked back to her room alone.

Emil and Ideal were left behind.

○

The Raults' house.

When Serge returned, Albert summoned him to his study.

Albert is dismayed to see his adopted son, Serge, who is a bit of a lark.

"If you're going to leave, at least inform me."

Serge is sitting on the couch, looking at the ceiling.

He fluttered his hands.

"I know."

"You don't, and that's why I'm repeating. You came back just a while ago, but you left again. Where have you been?"

"Well, it varies."

Albert gives his son a bitter look when he avoids the question.

The reason for accepting Serge as his adopted son was to make him the heir of the Rault family. After his son, Leon, died, Albert adopted him.

However, Serge wanted to be an adventurer, and lately, he wasn't attending the academy.

"Serge. Refrain from adventuring in the future."

"Huh?"

"I only allowed you to adventure during the vacation period at the academy, but you ignored that order and did whatever you wanted. Did you think this would be acceptable?"

It would be a while before Serge would get to adventure again.

But his reaction was different than expected.

"You've never accepted me as your son before, though?"

"This again? I have accepted you as my son. And you should at least..."

"Am I not a stand-in for *him*?"

"No one said anything like that."

"I don't know."

Him—referred to Leon, Albert's dead biological son.

Serge didn't like being compared to Leon since he was taken in.

This makes it hard to introduce Leon-kun to him. But I'll tell him eventually.

Leon, a young man from the Holfort Kingdom.

He was very similar to Leon, Albert's biological son, and was also very...

popular in the Republic. It would be impossible not to tell Serge.

"Serge, the New Years' festival is near. Please join us."

"New Year's Day? It's just a festival. I'm not a kid, and I don't want to go through the trouble of attending."

"You have to be there. I have someone to introduce you to."

"—Who?"

Serge wouldn't be at the New Years' Party if Albert told him here, therefore he decided to keep it under wraps.

"I'll introduce you then."

"Shit!"

Serge clicked his tongue, stood up, and left the study.

Albert looked forlorn as he watched his son's back.

◇

Angie and Livia were going to stay with us, so we went back to Marie's house.

"The reason? It's too small for all of you to stay here,"

Cordelia said. It made sense.

Angie was silent all the while.

I'm sitting in the dining room and sighing.

"Oh, how could I have let this happen."

As I was agonizing, Julius, sitting next to me, poked me with his elbow.

"Hey, Bartford."

"What?"

"What do you mean, 'what'? Are you going to do nothing in this situation? I'm sure you'll find a way out."

Everyones eyes were saying the same thing.

The reality of this situation is one that is forcing me to act.

From what I could see, Angie and Livia were sitting next to each other.

But there was no conversation.

They hadn't spoken to each other since the Noelle incident.

They probably want to talk a lot about each other.

Maybe they want to talk about the Republic's cuisine.

But they were currently quarreling.

This created the delicate atmosphere. Everyone wants to have a conversation, but doesn't have the courage to start one.

Cordelia-san, standing behind me, gave a deliberate cough.

"Leon-sama, why don't you talk about the dish to those two. I'm sure they've never eaten it."

"Eh? I'm not familiar with it."

I could hear discouraged voices from around me.

But then, Noel wittily explains to them.

"It's important to use the crustacean broth. The crustacean broth is very important," she explained to them, unable to stand the silence at the table.

But, it's not long before she runs out of topics about the food.

Angie thanks her curtly.

"I'm sorry to bother you."

"No, no."

The conversation trailed off.

It's been like this for a while now.

The normally noisy dining scene has fallen silent and only the clicking of dishes can be heard.

—What should I do to fix this?

◇

After we finished eating, I decided to talk to Marie about the fight between Angie and Livia.

Inside the mansion, the three of us, including Luxion, were discussing the matter.

"I want to fix their relationship. You guys, lend me your wisdom."

"It's refreshing to see you ask for help, master."

I sharpened my gaze at Luxion's sarcasm.

"Whose fault do you think this is?"

"The fact that master was suspected of cheating and the fact that those two are fighting are two different things. They're unrelated. Now could you please resolve this, it's uncomfortable."

Fuck this.

It's certainly not Luxion or my fault, but it's like their fight heated up after the whole cheating incident.

I think we have a little responsibility here.

As we stared at each other, Marie looked at us and shook her head.

Her face had a look like: "These guys don't know what they're doing."

"I don't care what those two (Livia and Angie) are fighting about. What matters is Noel. —What are you going to do, brother? I'm worried about her future."

"—You really don't like those two, do you?"

"What do you mean? They're as big a problem as Noel."

Marie pulled away from me with a very disgusted look on her face.

"Are you dull? We should worry more about Noel than the two who are having a child's brawl."

"I don't think I'm being dull."

The moment I said that, Marie showed a surprised face.

"What?!"

"You're even more dense than Luxion," she said, shaking her eye in disgust.

Their reactions were cold.

"What?"

"—Forget it. More importantly, Noelle is seriously in trouble. You should help her. Keep an eye on her too."

"I don't think I need to. That's Noelle's problem. She's the protagonist."

She was the protagonist of the second otome game.

She has a happy future.

I wonder if it's fine to interfere.

Luxion and Marie look like they think that I'm a pain in the ass.

"You're still thinking about the original timeline, you idiot, right?"

"Oh, so you're self-aware? Maybe master isn't as idiotic as I thought."

They're being too hard on me.

"You're too stupid to think straight. I'll let you decide what to do with Noel, regardless of whether you're good at it or not."

"If you bring her with us, I can help solve it."

"It's Noelle's life, I have no say in it."

"You're really terrible aren't you, brother?"

Awful? No. If she comes with us, she'll be treated as a priestess.

Granted, she would be treated the same if she stayed here.

Just—I want to at least respect the person's will.

"So, back to Livia and Angie, right? I mean, it's just a minor quarrel, and that's all well and good. If you don't interfere, they'll make up with each other. You don't have to worry about Noelle either! Men are such idiots."

"It's nice to meet someone who worries about the little things, postpones the big things—it's nice to see you're doing all you can to help the wrong master."

Luxion, as usual, is full of sarcasm.

Does he really consider me as his master? Such a question comes to my mind.

Marie looked down in front of me.

"Brother, are you sure you want to leave this up to Noelle? If Brother says so, Noelle will definitely follow!"

I understand what she's saying, but I'm hesitant to do it.

If I tell her to come to the Kingdom, she'll come without a doubt. But will that really make her happy?

"Don't rely on me so much, because—"

Suddenly, a knock comes from the door. Cordelia-san's voice comes from behind the door.

"Leon-sama, you have a visitor."

◇

"Hi, how are you doing?"

My guest was Louise.

The name is **[Louise Sara Rault]**—the second villainess and daughter of the last boss in the maiden game, **[Albert Sara Rault]**.

In the game, she was a bad girl who bullied the main character, but if you ask me, she's a big sister character who takes care of people. She also asked me to call her big sister as soon as we met. That would be a scary thing to hear in different circumstances, but to me, whose sister is very horrible—"I'd be happy to!", I'd like to say she's a very sweet woman.

If I could choose a sister, I'd choose her.

Why isn't she?

She reminds me of Jena, my own sister.

She's a terrible sister, to say the least.

Loose yellow-blond hair that reached her shoulders and kind purple eyes.

She's a senior in the academy, and acts like a real big sister.

—It would be great to actually have her as my older sister.

While I have mixed emotions, I put on a smile and respond to her.

"It's been quite hectic these past few days, but I'm doing fine."

Louise laughed as if she was troubled by my response, but she seemed somewhat happy.

"I'm sure you're fine if you can talk about it lightly. I'll ask you about your concerns later. Today, I came to invite you."

"Invite?"

"Yes, to the New Years' Festival of the Six Nobleman."

"New Years' Festival? Ah, I remember..."

It was one of the stories I heard from Marie, earlier.

It was one of the events in the second game.

It should have occurred when Noelle, was in her second year.

If things went according to the game timeline, the capture target would invite her there and formally declare their relationship or something like that.

"Oh, you knew? Once a year, we pledge our undying loyalty to the Holy Tree. But now it's just a small festival."

"A festival?"

"There's a cave in the Sacred Tree formed by the roots.

The younger generation, like us, swear allegiance to it."

Luxion, who was at my side, asks a question.

"You mean it's not an awe-inspiring ceremony, but a festival to be enjoyed? And you've come to invite master to it?"

"That's right. It's quite solemn at the start, but afterwards, the mood changes to that of a party. I'm sure you'll enjoy it. —hmm?"

I didn't understand what was being said at the start and merely nodded, but then a chill ran down my spine. I heard footsteps coming in to my room.

When the door opened, I saw Cordelia-san's figure there.

She moved away from the door and let Angie pass through.

"Oh... that's an interesting story. Leon, let me hear from you."

The next person to enter was Livia, who was supposed to be fighting with Angie.

"I heard a beautiful woman came to visit you, Leon-san. It seems to be true."

I glared at Cordelia-san, but she averted her gaze. —

Are you my enemy too?

"Huh, some people... Could, could it be? You're—"

As I was wondering how to introduce Louise-san, I saw the person herself happily clasping her hands.

With a twinkle in her eye, she approached Livia and Angie and shook their hands.

"Could it be that your Angelica? And you're Olivia, right?"

"Mm-hmm. Yeah, but—"

"Uh..."

They were puzzled by Louise's sudden friendly attitude.

Leaving them puzzled, Louise-san continued happily.

"I was surprised to hear you had two fiancé's, but even I, of the same sex, am envious of their beauty. You are a lucky man, Leon. Oh, I'm Louise.

[Louise Sara Rault]. I hope to get along."

When Angie recovered from her confusion, her expression softened, but she still remained dumbfounded.

"Y-You're the Raults' daughter, right? You seem quite close to Leon."

"I'm a good friend of his. Of course, it's not a man/woman thing."

Livia looked relieved at her words.

"I'm sorry I doubted you."

"It's okay. You seem to have been misunderstood."

Louise turned to me and gave a teasing smile.

"Leon, you can't have such cute fiancé's and be playing with other woman."

"Ha, I'm sorry about that."

Then Louise turns her face to the two, and tells them of the story.

"I'm sorry for being so abrupt, but please let me tell you about why I'm with Leon-san."

Angie nods her head.

"I made a promise to my brother long ago..."

◇

Once Louis was done and left, I was stopped by Livia.

"Leon-san!"

"W-What is it?"

I was surprised, but Livia didn't care and continued.

There were tears in her eyes.

"Please make her wish come true!"

"U-uh, yeah."

Livia is about to cry.

The reason why Louise loves me like a brother—

because her brother died.

It seems me and that dead brother have a similar atmosphere.

But the load is quite heavy for me. To act as the standin for a deceased brother.

"More importantly, won't Livia make up with Angie?"

Livia's shoulders tremble, and she looks away awkwardly.

"Oh, I want to apologize. I want to apologize and make up with her. But I don't agree with her treatment of Noelle. What do you think, Leon-san?"

"I think Noelle-san should choose."

To my naïve answer, Livia puffs her cheeks.

"Leon-san is mean."

"Why?"

"I understand you're thinking of both me and Angie."

But Noelle-san is unhappy because of it."

"Hm?"

"I understand that Noelle-san is an important person, unlike me."

I wish I could say something, but under these circumstances, it's useless.

"...To me, Livia is more important."

When Livia looks up, she blushes to her ear, and opens her mouth.

Then she holds he chest with her hands and regulates her breathing, before look at me with moist eyes.

"Leon-san, you've improved your mouth since you came to the Republic. I don't think I can trust your sincerity."

"Huh, am I that untrustworthy?"

When I laughed, Livia grabbed my arm.

"Angie is worried. Please talk to her. I'm sure Angie is waiting for you."

Looks like they're still close.

◇

When I visited Angie's room, she was sitting on her bed.

When she heard me walking towards her, she laid down on the bed with her upper body as is.

Even though I'm there, she looks quite vulnerable.

"Did Livia say that?"

"So... Will you make up with her?"

"I want to make up with her right away! But—what should I say? I was going to use Noelle for pure profit.

I wasn't looking at her as a person."

Anyone who gets their hands on the priestess would try to make a profit.

"If money is rolling in front of a person, they would grab it."

Well, it would be scary if tens of millions were on the road. I'm a small-minded and greedy person, I'm not one to blame Angie. "I'm sure you were thinking about the people of the Kingdom, weren't you?" She was

being greedy for others. I couldn't imitate her.

"You are kind. I'm sure I thought only for myself. I wanted her for my own interests."

"Angie's interests? Like increasing your family's political power?"

If you obtain the Holy Tree, you'll gain a lot of political power in the Kingdom in the future. That's how much power the Sacred Tree holds. I

think it's natural for Angie to put the interests of her family above her own.

That's a common noble mindset.

"No, I didn't think of it that way."

However, Angie shook her head.

"You're the one I thought of first. I thought future strength would make you happy. Only, you wouldn't want power at the expense of Noelle's feelings, would you?"

"My happiness?"

"I was blinded by profit. Forgive me."

"No, no, no, no, I don't need to, you should make up with Livia."

"Yeah, that's another thing! How do you think I should say sorry to Livia?"

Angie, who was so cool a few minutes ago, turned into an unreliable little girl when it came to Livia.

It's fine to be normal.

I was laughing at Angie, and she got up and popped me.



"Wah, stop laughing! I'm in real trouble!"

"No, I'm joking. Joking. You two can go sightseeing.

Hmm, if I left you alone though, you'd get into trouble.

Alright, I'll give you a tour of the Republic!"

"Oh, you're sure?"

"I promise."

Angie stopped hitting me and just held me in her arms.

"Make sure you show me around properly. I forgot to mention that I was also looking forward to sightseeing this time. Besides--ah!"

Angier seemed to remember something.

She looked embarrassed that she had forgotten.

"Leon, I'm sorry. There were so many things going on that I forgot to tell you."

"Eh?"

Chapter 3 - Sister and Brother

The heads of the six great noble families gathered in a meeting.

Most of them had bitter faces, and Albert also had a tired look on his face.

The Kingdom has sent some troublesome people, haven't they?

Until now, they had been negotiating with a man from the Kingdom for reparations because of the incidents that took place.

They wanted to get this matter out of the way before New Years' Eve.

After all, next years' New Years' Eve had a different meaning.

After the incident with Loic, many events in the Republic had been canceled. From a foreign perspective, the Republic seems to be in the midst of an emergency. In order to disprove this impression, the New Years'

Festival was to be held with a great deal of pomp and excitement. The big task beforehand was to negotiate with the Holfort Kingdom.

The person sent by the Kingdom to negotiate was so difficult to deal with that everyone was exhausted.

Then suddenly, a person opened their mouth.

That person was Lambert, the Head of the Faiviel family.

He was a small, lanky man with a lonely look and unflattering personality.

Such a man would not dare to hide his indignation.

“What humiliation! It's unheard of for the undefeated Republic to be mistreated so badly by a third-rate state like the Kingdom.”

Everyone was angry and wanted to agree, but reality was different.

Bellange, head of the Barielle house, also expresses his frustration—at Lambert.

“Why is the man who was silent for so long speaking now?” The words expressed his clear dislike of Lambert.

Lambert flashed a ridiculous smile at Bellange.

“Whose fault do you think lies in this situation? By the way, how is the ex-heir who was rejected by the priestess?”

“You!”

When Bellange stood up, Albert reprimanded him.

“Let’s leave it at this. That’s enough, both of you.”

When they were about to leave, several subordinates asked for permission to enter the room.

When Albert gave them permission, the out-of-breath subordinates replied.

“It’s bad! It’s bad! The Holy Tree is—”

◇

The dimly lit city was colored by the lights of the street lamps.

I exhaled and my breath turned white, it seems the Republic’s winters are cold too.

“If it snows, then it will be a White Christmas.”

It was Angie who gave me a questioning look at my words.

“White—what?”

Angie and Livia are both standing with me between them. (IOI) They

were both wearing coats, and their cheeks were a little red.

“Leon-san, sometimes you say strange things, don’t you?”

There’s no Christmas in this world.

There are events that replace it, though.

Livia looks up at the sky.

“I’m sure you’ll find it interesting. When I saw the huge sacred tree, I thought it was a mountain.”

“Isn’t this a bit too big?”

When I look at the holy tree, I’m in awe at its size.

I wonder how long it took for it to grow to this size.

Angie looked at her surroundings with interest.

“I see some airship-like vehicle travelling on the ground. They must be more convenient for transport. If an airship were to crash, there would be large damage.”

Angie’s eyes lit up a bit as she looked at the street.

“I’d love to bring vehicles like that to the Kingdom.

But it would difficult to supply fuel with the necessary magic stones. If we set the price high enough, it would be possible, but that would mean that most commoners won’t be able to afford it.”

I look at Angie, who is thinking about something so deeply, and am impressed.

“You’ve thought that much much about a single tram?

Angie is amazing.”

Then Luxion, who loves to criticize me, cut into the conversation.

“Doesn’t the problem lie with Master? It’s sad that you don’t have a sense of urgency while witnessing a foreign powers technical superiority.”

“What’s the point of me considering that? I think the technical know-how should be considered by people greater than me.”

But that Roland guy doesn’t even work, so maybe he’s not thinking about it at all.

“Well, even if I abandoned that Roland, I probably wouldn’t feel guilty.”

Angie looks at me and puts her hand on her forehead.

“Are you sure your allowed to call him that and get away with it?”

“Sometimes it’s hard to tell whether you’re a fool or a brave man. I know that you can be counted on to be reliable when the situation calls for it, but aren’t you too carefree?”

Seeing me smiling, Livia entered the conversation.

“I like the way you normally are, Leon. You are clumsy and kind—and cute.”

“Cute? Me?”

The one who replied was Luxion.

“Olivia! Do you want me to examine you? This could be a sign of serious brain or eye problems!”

This guy... is it really so strange that people say I'm cute?!

“I’m uh, well, I’m fine.”

“No, the fact you think that master looks good is the sign of an anomaly. Angelica is the same.”

“You think I’m crazy too?”

“Yes. Master is not a man of courage. Master is usually indecisive, and

struggles at the critical moments. And he's a terrible liar.”

And you're a sucker for a AI. Did I do something wrong to you?

“Oh man, you are so full of shit! Don't spread rumors just because you don't like me.”

“Rumors? Do you have a problem with admitting facts?

You definitely do, don't you?”

“R-remember this. I'm going to get back at you.”

We couldn't stop badmouthing each other.

As we were arguing, Angie and Livia were laughing at us, as if it was funny.

“Forgive me. It's a relief to see you guys are acting normal.”

—The same is true for Livia.

“Those two are as good friends as always. Leon couldn't have changed that much while he was abroad.”

“Aren't those two treating me like a kid?”

“Master, may I ask you a question?”

“What?”

“A flower is blooming on the holy tree. I've never heard of such a phenomenon occurring, do you know anything about it?”

We looked up but couldn't see anything, so Luxion projected an image.

It looked like a white chrysanthemum-esque flower in bloom.

“Does the sacred tree also bloom? But it looks unnatural in terms of position.”

Livia also had the same thought.

"Yes—it feels like it's installed. Like a fake. Unnatural.

It feels creepy and unpleasant."

Livia felt creeped out.

White flowers on the sacred tree. What will happen in the future?

◇

We arrived at Marie's mansion, and the atmosphere seemed normal.

When I opened the door, Marie showed up. She gave me a disappointed look upon realizing I didn't have my carry-on with me.

I guess she was expecting a souvenir.

A sweet and spicy smell came from the kitchen.

Julius appeared in the doorway suddenly, with Angie staring at him inexplicably.

"You're all back? Sorry, dinner will be late again. I'll be right back."

Julius is on dinner duty today.

Ever since he came back after being kicked out of the mansion, Julius has been handling dinner regularly.

It's a good thing. It's good yes, but the dinner he prepares is always skewers. Julius stepped back in to prepare the skewers.

Livia comforts Angie when she sees her covering her face.

"Please get a grip, Angie."

"Livia—I don't feel regret being abandoned by His Highness. I don't.

But I can't help but feel this indescribable feeling at the sight of him."

I agree too. No one could have imagined that the Prince of the Kingdom

would become fascinated with roasting skewers and become a chef. I didn't imagine it either.

Once Cordelia-san arrived, she took our coats.

"Welcome home. Will you be staying for dinner?"

Angie let out a sigh.

We ate lunch outdoors, but we didn't have dinner because we thought we would have it here.

"I'll have dinner. Those two as well."

"Angelica-san, would you like for me to make a special menu for you two?"

"That would not be polite. We will be changing. Livia and I will be in our room."

"Yes, ma'am."

Livia gives me a small wave and heads up the stairs to her room.

I walked to the dining room, where I saw Marie and the others eating.

"It's great not having to prepare dinner!"

There was also alcohol available near Marie, who was chewing on a skewer with both hands.

Rather than a dinner, it seems like a drinking party.

Carla, Marie's friend and the person serving her looks happy.

"Julius-dono will clean up after dinner, too."

The one with a dumbfounded look on his face is Kyle, Marie's servant.

"Are you sure you can trust the prince with the kitchen?

Even if you can trust him with the tools—he *is* the Prince."

Marie drank all the sake in one gulp, grabbing a skewer.

She drank with dignity.

“Phew~. It’s okay, it’s okay! It’s fine, it’s fine! Julius likes to do it too.

We’ll be leaving the Republic soon anyways.”

After the winter break, Leon and the others will be going back to the Kingdom.

This may just be the only time Julius will be able to immerse himself in his hobbies.

Thinking this, Marie let him do what he wanted.

Seeings I was back, Noelle approached me.

“Did already eat dinner?”

“No, I’m about to though.”

“I se—oh, I’m sorry.”

Noelle, remembering that Angie and Livia were there, resumed her meal away from me.

I made Noelle worried.

Despite the fragile air over here, the idiots were enjoying themselves.

Greg and Chris were arguing.

“Greg, don’t just eat the chicken breast. And why are you putting salt?

Eat it with the sauce.”

“The chicken breast is my justice! The chicken breast is my justice! I only eat the chicken breast! Oh yeah, you can eat the rest.”

He’s obsessed with the chicken breast.

Also, despite him sounding sober, Chris was dressed weirdly.

He was wearing loincloth and a happi coat.

He isn't usually dressed like this.

"Isn't it cold?"

They gave me a hard time last year, so why am I with them right now?

That's when it happens.

CRASH! I hear a crash, so I go into the kitchen to find Yumeria-san scrambling.

"Hey, you okay?"

I run over to her, and she's on the verge of tears.

"I'm sorry. I just wanted to help you."

She seems to have fallen over and broken the plate.

Julius stops Ms. Yumeria from trying to pick it up by hand.

"You'll get hurt, so let's get the tools. I'm going to go get it," he said,

"because I was working part-time at a food stall, I won't be fazed by an accident of this magnitude. I was just a little impressed.

After being impressed, I check to see if Yumeria-san is injured.

"It looks like you're not hurt."

"I'm sorry. I keep making mistakes."

A depressed Yumeria is really cute.

"Don't worry about it."

Just then, Kyle came into the kitchen.

Ms. Yumeria is Kyle's mother, despite her age.

But it's Kyle who looks like the mature one.

“—Did you break another plate?”

“Kyle... I'm sorry, I'm sorry.”

“. . You should apologize to Master, not me. You shouldn't be so careless, even if we can pay for them, they're not cheap.”

I stopped when I saw Kyle who kept complaining to Ms. Yumeria.

“Okay, you can go back to eat now.”

“No, I'll help you clean up. In the first place, it's wrong for servants to eat with their masters. Until now, I couldn't afford a separate meal, but from now on it would be better to eat separately.”

“Kyle, I'm sorry.”

Ms. Yumeria was apologizing but Kyle's attitude is cold.

“Don't apologize to me, apologize to your Master.”

Ms. Yumeria hurriedly bows her head towards me.

“I'm very sorry!”

“No, that's enough. Hey, Kyle! Be a little kinder to your mother.”

◇

At the same time.

The mansion of the Rault family was just informed of the unusual nature of the sacred tree.

Louise and Serge were summoned to the office in the mansion. Louise crosses her arms and refuses to look at Serge's face.

Serge has his hands in his pockets and he too turns his face away from

Louise. In front of the two, Albert was still dismayed at their silent quarrelling. There were more important things right now, however.

“The sacred tree has blossomed. I’ve had the records checked. This is a phenomenon that hasn’t occurred in the last three hundred years.”

Serge laughs when he hears this.

“That’s nice. We’re lucky to be able to see such a scene.”

“You have no idea what you’re talking about. Why don’t you try to understand your situation better?”

“What?”

They glared at each other.

“The new year’s festivities will take place as planned, although we’ll have to wait and see. I’m sure you’ll both be able to attend.”

“A new year festival is for kids. I don’t need to go.”

“Serge!”

Albert stopped Serge from leaving the room, but he left. Louise looked down and clenched her zither.

“I’m sure you’ll be able to find a way to make it work.”

“I’m sure you’ll forgive him, Louise. Serge is—”

“Why are you so concerned for him? Besides, even if he wanted to, Leon couldn’t go to the New Year’s party.

I’m not going to forgive him.”

The doctor diagnosed that Leon, who was very sick, would not survive the year. He wanted to visit the New Year’s Festival.

In the end, that wish did not come true.

That's why—Louise wanted to have Leon participate in place of her brother.

It was also a way of making amends for not being able to fulfill her brother's wish.

Knowing this, and knowing that it would be troublesome, Albert also allowed Leon to participate, even though he knew it would be troublesome.

Even though he knew that Serge would be frustrated when he met Leon.

"I think I understand your hatred for Serge. But you've been family since we adopted him."

Louise looked up and Albert saw a look of hatred in her eyes.

"I will never accept him."

Reaching for Louise as she left the room, Albert stopped to call out to her.

◇

Back in the room, Louise took one small photograph from the desk drawer.

The one in the black and white photo was Leon.

In the past, pictures and drawings of her brother had been displayed throughout the castle.

But now there wasn't a single one.

The reason is Serge.

Albert, who wanted an heir, adopted him—he threw away most of Leon Jr.'s. photos. Leon Jr.'s room was also burnt, alongside all his memorabilia.

"Why!? He's not family! Isn't that right, Leon Jr.?"

Talking to the photo Louis remembers the day Serge came.

◇

It had been three years' since Leon Jr.'s death.

The inside of the castle was less lively than ever.

The noisy brother was gone, and it was as if a fire had been extinguished.

However, if everybody knew the heir passed away, the vassals of the Rault family and the branch families would start making noise.

A meeting was held to resolve the situation, and Serge arrived at the castle. Serge's parent's were delighted that he would be the next Heir of the Rault family!

Only, Serge looked saddened, behind his parents.

It couldn't be helped, and Louise felt sorry for him.

She had a chance to be alone with him, and called out to him.

"I'm your sister from now on. I'm sure we'll get alo—

what's wrong?

"--sai."

"What?"

"Oh, God, it's annoying! I'm not going to be friends with you!"

Serge ran out of the room.

It's a shock to Louise, who expected the same kind of reaction as her naive brother, even though they were different.

Did I make a mistake?

Louise had been struggling with Serge for days.

She had tried to get along with him after that, but Serge hadn't even looked at Louise.

And it was a few months after Serge's arrival.

"No. Oh no! Serge, stop it! Please, that's a gift from Leon!"

When Louise returned home, she saw Serge, who had thrown some of his pictures and paintings and other memorabilia into the fire.

She hugged Serge to stop him, but he shook her off.

Serge threw the items that Leon Jr. had given her into the fire.

When Louise tried to jump into the fire, she was seized by the rushing servants.

"Stop! Please, give it back!"

She reaches out her hand while crying, but what Leon gave her was a ring, made of paper. The poorly made and awkward item quickly burned without a trace in the flames.

It was a memento known by the two of them alone, and the servants were bewildered, not knowing the circumstances. Only once—Louise had told Serge about the item only once. When she had taken him outside, Serge had shown interest in it, so she told him about it.

Serge watched it burn for a long time.

Louise cried and then shouted to Serge, "I hate you!

"I hate you, I'll never forgive you! —I'll never forgive you!"

And Serge, who had never looked at her face properly before, stared at Louise's face for the first time.

Before she knew it, Louise had fallen asleep, and she woke up lying face down on her bed, remembering a bad incident from her childhood. She hadn't even changed her clothes and was lying in bed.

—that is the worst dream I've ever had.

That day—her parents scolded Serge, but in consideration of his feelings, they removed the rest of Leon Jr.'s photos and paintings from the mansion.

If he saw them, Serge would probably destroy or burn them.

Why did this happen?

Serge had grown to hate her brother.

Normally, Albert would revoke the adoption.

However, Serge already received the coat of arms of the six noble families.

It wasn't something that could be easily removed.

Being part of the branch family, the vassals consent, the domestic situation—despite all these variables, Serge was adopted.

Louise looked at her brother's picture and spoke lovingly.

"Leon, it's almost New Years' Day."

◇

When he returned to his room, Serge kicked his chair in frustration.

He sat up in bed and looked up at the ceiling.

"What 'New Years Festival'? Isn't that just an event for those crazy about praying to the sacred tree. The contents aren't meaningful at all. We pray and vow, then party, then young men and women enter the cave and make more vows to the stone monument inside But only family members of the seven main families are supposed to enter, so why am I going?"

"No, wait. If she's engaged to Emile, will Lelia come too? I'll attend."

The reason why he likes her is because she's easy to get along with.

She is not overly reverent like a noblewoman, and is a bit foul-mouthed,

to his liking. She understands the fact that he admires adventurers.

For ordinary women, it is difficult to have a casual relationship with a member of the six noble families.

The rest—she hates his sister in the same way as he does.

Although he didn't say it with his mouth, Serge felt a sense of closeness in the way Lelia looked at Louise.

Sometimes, she looked at her with a complex mixture of indescribable love and hate.

Serge saw that and realized that Lelia was just like him.

From there, he began to take an interest in Lelia and found himself falling in love with her.

He was surprised even by himself when he realized he was in love with Lelia, because she was like a different type of person than his first love.

Remembering that much, Serge's expression became cloudy.

“My first love is going to come true. I'm not going to give up on this one.”

Chapter 4 - The Promise That Day

It was over ten years ago.

Louise, who was at her brothers side as he grew weaker day by day, spoke to Leon.

“Leon, are you cold?”

“It’s okay, si— *cough, cough.*”

Seeing Leon coughing, Louise quickly clasped his hand.

The doctor didn’t know why Leon was getting weaker and weaker.

Originally, the sacred tree—the coat of arms should have protected him!

The emblems of the six great noble families should have repelled any disease! But it didn’t!

“Leon, get a grip.”

Louise’s emblem emitted a warm glow and tried to heal Leon, but it was ineffective.

However, Leon smiled and mouthed his thanks.

“Thank, you sister. I’m fine.”

Louise knew it was a gentle lie from Leon.

“You’ll be fine. You’re going to be fine. Me, mom and dad are working hard for you.”

They contacted numerous doctors.

They even bought some secret foreign medicines.

Still, Leon never recovered.

Louise took Leon's hand in hers.

"Leon, what will you do when you're well?"

"Umm... oh yeah! The New Years' Festival!"

While coughing, he told her his wish.

"New Years' Festival?"

"I was told that I couldn't attend because it was too dangerous, the last time I tried."

Louise and Leon couldn't participate because they were too young.

"Hmm. Well, why don't you go in the cave with me?"

Leon laughed and refused.

"W-Why?!"

"Sis, I-I have a fiance, so I'll be going in with her. I haven't met her yet.

My number one is her. It would be rude to go in with you instead of her."

Seeing Leon smiling, Louise burst into tears.

"You idiot!"

"Wait, don't cry. Yeah, that's right. I'll go in the cave with you! I'm sure they'll let me go in twice."

"You womanizer!"

Leon rubs Louise back to comfort her.

"I'm sorry. I'll definitely get better and attend the New Years' Festival.

Then I'll go in the cave with you."

"It's absolute. I won't forgive you if you lie."

“—Yup.”

Seeing her brother's weak smile, Louise became sad.

◇

As soon as New Year's began, a New Years' party was to be held.

“It's not what I imagined.”

“What were you imagining?”

“Well... it's called New Years' Festival, so a New Year's vigil?”

When we arrived at the New Years' Festival, we found an amusement park.

Well-dressed adults were smiling and taking kids around the park.

The kids were playing on the rides, clearly enjoying themselves.

It looked like the amusement parks in foreign drama.

I had imagined a festival lined with food stalls, but it was different.

' --Master, please be careful!

“You, do you think I'm going to get lost?”

I thought it was either sarcasm or sarcasm, as usual, when Luxion told me to be careful, but I was wrong.

Someone was staring at us.

I'm not sure if it's a good idea for me to do so, however.

It was Lelia, but I was surprised to see another presence that I was more interested in than Lelia, although she was very well dressed.

“Hey, what's the meaning of this? There's a duplicate of you with her.”

“Unknown. It's probably from the second otome game, it has a presence

similar to me. It's surprising to see my kind in this era."

The blue Luxion noticed us.

As Leila approached, she brushed her side ponytail away with her side ponytail away with her left hand and turned it to her back.

Her confident demeanor was very different to the one before winter break.

"It's been a while."

"Happy New Years."

When I tried to greet her in the usual Japanese New Years' way, she blushed, as if she thought I was teasing her.

"Are you trying to make fun of me?"

"I'm not making fun of you. I exchanged Japanese greetings with Marie today. I almost cried. It's nice to be able to say 'Happy New Years' after such a long time."

As I laughed, a disgruntled Lelia turned to the blue guy.

"Say hello, Ideal."

Ideal?

The blue one? The one in front of me—no, in front of Luxion.

"It's nice to meet you, please call me Ideal. It's a surprise to see you.

(he's referring to Luxion) I've heard of you before, but it's a miracle to meet Luxion in this day and age. Let's continue to be friends in the future, shall we?"

It was a very friendly AI.

However, Luxion's reaction was cold.

“It's a supply ship, is it? It looks like you've been alerted to us for quite some time? Yet, my intelligence gathering has not noticed you at all.”

“Supply ship?”

I look at Lelia. She has her arms crossed and looks somewhat triumphant.

“Ideal is a supply ship. Luxion is a transport ship, but Ideal is a military transport ship. Isn't it great?”

A military transport ship.

Great, but I don't know how great it is.

“What's so great about Ideal, Luxion?”

“It's a great warship against newcomers. If you compare the performance to my main body, there will be a number of points of victory.”

That's great.

Was it because of this guy's performance that Luxion hadn't noticed it before? But Luxion was suspicious of it.

“What's wrong?”

Ideal was approaching me.

“You must be Luxion's master, Mr. Leon. Thank you for your continued support of Luxion.”

“You know about us?”

I glanced at Lelia, though she didn't return it.

“Ideal, that's enough of your greetings.”

“Copy that.”

Ideal obediently followed Lelia's instructions, unlike another AI I know. I

looked at said AI and he noticed.

He seems to have understood what I want to say.

“If you have something to say, why don’t you put it in words, Master?”

“Why don’t you follow Ideal and respect me a little?”

“I will try my best.”

Why do you hate respecting me so much? These AI are too stubborn.

Lelia looked at us and laughed a little foolishly.

“You guys really don’t get along, do you? You’re not even recognized as his master.”

“Really?”

“Well, Ideal isn’t as stubborn. He has flaws, but if I point them out he will try his best to fix them.”

I looked at Ideal, he nodded.

“Thanks to Lelia-sama, I’ve been released from my standby. That much is natural.”

I envy the relationship between them.

I shoot Luxion a glance.

“Aren’t you gonna thank me, too?”

“For how long have I wiped master’s back? I’m the one owed a thanks.”

This guy, I have a feeling he’s really going to betray me one day.

No, he’d already betrayed me.

Lelia looks at the clock in the hall and starts walking away.

“I’m busy today, so I’ll take my leave. Let’s meet again. We have to talk

about the future. Ideal, let's go."

"Yes, Master."

◇

After I left Lelia and Ideal, I headed to the meeting place with Louise.

Louise was more dressed up than usual.

I'm wearing a coat over my suit, and Louise wraps her arms around me.

There's something that bothers me.

"There are a lot of small children here."

Yes. I heard that Louise and Leon could not attend because they were too young. And yet, there were many children in the hall.

"—Father made it possible for the children to attend too."

"Mr. Alberg?"

"I told you I'm not the only one who felt sad. Okay, we're getting started. Come on over here and join us."

She pulled me by the arm to a even more decorated stage.

Sacred tools were also set up, and this was the only place where the atmosphere was different from the others.

The heads of the six great noble families had gathered to thank the Holy Tree, pray, and declare their vows.

A large number of other nobles have also gathered there.



In the midst of all of this, Louise pointed to a cave with a eye-catching gate.

"That's the cave, with the stone monument. That's where you got to take your vows. We'll both go in there. It's made of tree roots."

The fact it was made of tree roots didn't bother me, this *was* a fantasy world. But was it right for me to go in there with her?

"Are you sure you want me to go with you? Even if we look alike, I'm
—"

I'm not the real Leon Jr.

That's what I was trying to say, but Louise squeezed my arm very hard.

"It's quite rude of you to run away now. Or did you feel bad for your fiance's? I'm sorry if it's that, but good friends can go in too."

I put myself in Louise's shoes. If I went into the cave alone, it would be like hell.

I would definitely not attend, and just run away.

If you don't have a partner, this is not a gathering you want to attend.

"Well... I've never been in the cave before."

"What?"

"You know, I made a promise. I promised my brother I'd go in with him. That's why I haven't gone in with somebody, until today."

Would it be right for me to be her first time?

As I was thinking that, the hostess announced that the ritual was over and that it was time to go into the cave to pray.

The place became noisy.

A young man was standing nearby and told a woman that he had been in love with her for a long time.

Jessica—I've always been in love with you. Come into the cave with me.
—Jessica - I've been in love with you for a long time, come with me to the cave and I will pray to the Sacred Tree for our future together.

A man on his knees holding a woman's hand.

He has a lot of courage to confess in a place like this.

But the world is not that easy—.

“I'm glad. Jack, I've been waiting to hear those words for a long time.”

—What? She accepted!

Everyone around me is applauding the new couple.

I was caught up in it, too, and gave them a crackling, unwilling applause.

Then, confessions of love began everywhere.

“Ms. Louise, what is this?”

“It's rather normal to confess at times like this. It's quite popular.”

She looked at me smiling, but being a foreigner, I couldn't understand it.

What a surprise! Contrary to the kingdom, the women and the men in this country are very kind. I can't help but remember when I confessed my love to some Kingdom women and they said to me, “Come back after looking in the mirror.”

“The Republic is so nice.”

“Really?”

I thought about telling Louise the details of the kingdom's situation, but it

would damper the mood. If you look at the cave, there is a line of people waiting in line.

"It looks like we won't be able to get in for a while."

"Yeah. Then you want to go have some fun?"

She took me by the arm and headed to where the amusement park was located.

Louise was dressed as an adult woman in a dress but was smiling innocently like a child.

◇

After inviting Leon to the mobile amusement park, Louise made her way through the crowd.

Arm in arm with Leon, they looked like first-time lovers.

A bewildered Leon was led around by a fluttering Louise.

"Let's go to that one."

When Louise pointed to the stall, Leon looked surprised.

"A food stall?"

"I don't usually go to food stalls, but at a place like this you have to experience everything."

I'm sure it'll be fun, even if Leon Jr. isn't here, was what Louise was thinking.

"Is Leon uncomfortable in these places?

She was worried about Leon, who was confused.

She was also sorry for making him go along with his selfishness.

Leon has a fiancé and it would be distressing if she suspected him of

cheating on her.

He might've explained the situation to his fiance's, but even if a woman might understand in theory, her heart would always think differently.

Leon was slow in that area, so Louise was even more worried.

"No, I'm confused by the atmosphere, which isn't present in the kingdom, it's fun. And being taken by a beautiful woman~ What a great time to be a man."

"Leon, you should learn a little more about women's mindset. You'll get stabbed by your fiance's."

Laughing at Louise's words, Leon had the attitude that it didn't matter to him.

He was worried about Louise.

Should I solve her problems before returning to the Kingdom?

Being attached to a person who looks like her brother—Leon couldn't leave her alone.

◇

Lelia was waiting for her turn to enter the cave.

She was a great noble, but the couples who had successfully confessed would be given priority.

Next to enter are the officials of the six great nobles.

It is not natural that couples are given priority over the six noble families, but in the world of otome games, it is understandable.

The romantic events take precedence in an otome game.

It was time for Lelia to enter the cave, but there are so many people that she cannot find Emile.

“Ideal, can't you find Emile?”

“Apparently he's talking and can't come over here.”

“You're leaving your fiancé alone at a time like this!

It's almost the end of our time to get in!”

The prayers of the lovers were over, and now the people involved with the six noble families were entering. That time was also running out.

“It sounds like an important person. It's a serious discussion and I'd feel bad interrupting it.”

“Artificial intelligence has feelings? Ha! That's good.”

“Could it be someone in the family business?”

Lelia knew that Emile was serious, so she decided to wait for a while.

Suddenly, her arm was grabbed by someone in the crowd.

“Heh?”

The other party was—Serge in his suit.

“Lelia, come with me.”

Lelia was flustered as her arms were forcefully pulled back.

' Wait a minute! Where are you taking me?!'

Serge pulled her towards the cave.

◇

An announcement was made in the hall.

“Next!”

The time for the officials of the six great nobles was coming to an end, and we were in a hurry. Me and Louise lost track of time and that's why

we're in this situation.

"I'm sorry. Can we still go in?", Louise asked the attendant, who looked a little confused.

"It's all right, but actually..."

"Then we'll go in. I'm sorry."

It was brighter inside than expected.

It reminds me of the lanterns I saw at the fair.

"It's pretty bright."

"Yeah, you're right," Louise let out a sigh, "I'm tired."

Louise was out of breath from running as fast as she could. Louise put her hand on her chest.

"I would have regretted it for a long time if I hadn't made it in time."

"Don't worry, if you don't make it in time, you can use your power as a great noble to get in anyway."

"That's true, but I don't like that."

The walls and ceiling felt like wooden roots.

If you touch them, there was a lumpy feeling, like something damp.

Moss grew and small tree branches grew in places. Louise leaned closer to me.

"I wanted to come here with my brother, who was feeling better," she said.

"I promised him that I would. But Leon didn't make it past that year."

Let's try to be a proper stand-in this time.

"Then you've made good on your promise."

“—But, you know, I’ve broken a lot of promises.

There are several others. Leon, are you a liar?”

“No, I’m not.”

Louise’s expression softened.

“I’m sure I’ll be able to help you in your time of need, as payment.” she said.

She said that since she was supposed to get the guardian’s crest. I’m sure she would be a great guardian.

She’s a great kid.

“Now that I think about it, I was a very lucky child. He even proposed to me, and gave me a ring made of paper.” She smiled, but her expression quickly turned sad and forlorn.

“A ring for your sister? I would never be able to do that.”

“Speaking of which, Leon, you said you had an older sister, don’t you?

Didn’t you say she set a bomb or something? You’re kidding me, right?”

“It’s true. They tried to kill me.’

It was because of a cold-hearted, scumbag named Jilk, though!

But she’s still a bad sister.

“Wow. You’ve got a horrible family. How about joining ours?”

“Haha, that’s a great suggestion.”

“No, really. We really thought about adopting you—

my parents, and me.”

“I’m in no position to be adopted, and even if you succeed, it’ll take a lot

of trouble.”

“Besides, my parents are kind, and so is my brother.”

Though my sister is troubling.

Huh? My family would be pretty good if it weren’t for my sisters.

“Oh, you’re good friends with everyone but your sister.”

◊

“What are you trying?! ”

Lelia was planning to go in with Emile, originally, but Serge forced her to accompany him.

When Serge let go of her hand, Lelia fell down, next to the wall.

Ideal, who was at her side, reprimanded Serge for his action.

“I’m not impressed. I didn’t expect you to force a woman.”

“Everyone saw you and I at the entrance! What am I supposed to tell Emile?! ”

Serge, who had been silent until now, turned serious.

He placed his hand on the wall next to Lelia and brought his face close.

“Why do you care about the guy talking with strangers rather than with you?”

How does he know what Emile is doing?

Lelia narrowed her eyes.

“No way, you—”

“I just asked someone to pull him away from you. But Emile could have declined talking to him. It was up to him.”

Hearing that, Lelia lowered her head.

Really, Emile, you don't understand a women's mind. I thought you were a serious one, but I didn't expect you to be so boring.

Lelia was reminded of the person she was engaged to in her previous life.

That person, unlike Emile, was fun to be with.

But—they still broke up.

Reflecting on that, she chose the serious Emile as her lover in this life.

But not much changed.

Still, Lelia had no intention of betraying Emile.

'—Serge, stop it."

Why is that? I love you more than him."

"You can say as many words as you like—?"

"Ooh, that's bold."

Ideal was carefree and impressed, but Lelia was panicked.

That's because Serge had kissed her.

Lelia's mouth was blocked by Serge's mouth.

She tried to resist, but she couldn't escape from Serge's grip, who very strong.

However, that resistance wasn't serious either.

For several minutes, Lelia and Serge remained as they were.

When Serge finally released her, Lelia turned over when he finally let her go.

Her mind was reeling from Serge's passionate behavior, something Emile

had never had before.

Serge whispers his love to Lelia's reddened ear.

"I'm serious. I really want you. I was really surprised when I found out that you were engaged to Emile. I was so frustrated that my eyes went completely dark."

The tone of his voice didn't seem like a joke, and Serge was not going to let go until he heard Lelia's answer.

"Lelia—I want a family with you. A real family."

"Family?"

Perhaps sensing the air, Ideal was silent.

He didn't interrupt them.

"Serge, I'm not! I'm sorry. I can't do it."

When Lelia replied, Serge narrowed his eyes and looked sad.

"I see. I'm sorry."

Amidst the awkward air, Ideal turns towards the entrance.

"Oops, I shouldn't have forced myself to interrupt you.

Some people have caught up to us."

The person there—was Louise.

She came running up to them.

"What the hell are you guys thinking!"

The person behind her looked surprised.

"Serge?"

Just as Lelia's side is crowded by Louise.

“Lelia, did you come here on your own volition?”

“No! It's—”

Serge forced me to come to him.

As Lelia was about to say that—Serge punched the wall.

Both Lelia and Louise turned their gazes to Serge.

Serge, trembling with anger, stared at Louise.

“What do you mean, Louise! Who is that guy!”

As Louise stepped back from Serge, the man who approached interrupted them. Ideal greets him in a disciplined manner.

“That was a very quick reunion.”

◇

“—Who's this guy?”

I encountered a capture target, a boy, and it was strange.

The hostility he showed towards me was tremendous.

Hate? Hate? Why?

It's true that I rampaged through the Republic, but I should have done nothing to this guy personally.

And why would he hate me so much?

Serge stares at me with a wrinkled brow, blood flowing from his fist that punched the wall. It seems he was so angry he didn't even feel the pain.

“Huh? We've never met before, right?”

Lelia was puzzled as she looked around for help.

However, it seems that Louise-san knew what was going on.

“This is our first meeting. I'm sure you're not the only one who's interested in this.”

“Who are you?”

With the way he was about to hit me, I knew I was about to get in trouble again.

Are the capture targets all *this* troublesome?

When someone comes out of a fight, all I can think of is

“Nice to meet you. I'm Leon Fou Bartford. I'm from the Holfort Kingdom
—”

While I was greeting him, he hit me out of nowhere.

I was blown backwards and fell on my ass.

Louise runs up to me and hugs me up.

“Leon-kun! Serge, do you have any idea what you've done! He is a foreign nobleman. He's a foreign nobleman, and if you lay your hands on him—”

Lelia seems to be confused by the suddenness of the event.

“Wha, why? Serge, what's going on?”

When Lelia called out to him, Serge turned his gaze to Louise.

“Leon? What, have you found a replacement for me?”

“—I don't know what you're talking about, but you should apologize to him. You have no idea what you're doing.”

“It doesn't matter! He's got your brother's name and your brother's face.”

“I don't know what you're talking about, nor do I care.”

Louise is just trying to fulfill her promise to Leon Jr.

When I try to complain, Luxion approaches me.

“It's another nuisance. The Master seems to love attracting trouble.”

“I didn't like getting hit by him, you know?”

“Oh, I see. So, do you want to get rid of it (Serge)?”

I was waiting for the usual radical comment, but this time Ideal answered.

“I'm don't think that's a good idea, Luxion.”

“You attacked us first, didn't you?”

“It's not very nice to eliminate everything we disagree with.”

“It's more decent than I expected.”

I'm not sure if the artificial intelligence I got is just an outlier, but this AI seems nice.

“For now, let's just finish the prayer and go outside.

You there! Remember this when we get outside.”

I'm a man of vengeance.

And I'm gonna make him pay.

“Why don't we finish this right here?”

Serge was about to reach for his hand, but Lelia stopped him with a hug.

“Serge, wait! This guy is really dangerous. I'll explain later, but for now, let's go outside.”

“Shit! Lelia, let's get to the back of the room!”

Louise took out a handkerchief and held his bleeding nose.

“I'm sorry. I didn't know you were here. I'm so sorry”

she said, looking at Louise, who was depressed, and she lost all sense of blame.

“Shall we finish our prayers first? You're going to make good on your promise, right?”

“—Yes.”

Following Serge and Lelia's back, we headed for the stone monument at the back.

“Phew!”

It's smaller than I thought it would be.

When I heard about the stone monument that the holy tree protects, I imagined a large one, but the actual one was small. However, the holy tree is rooted to protect the monument alone.

“So, should I pray to this?”

Mr. Louise nods and shows me how to do it.

“Hold my hand. —Yes, and close your eyes and pray.

It's said that if your prayers and wishes reach the Holy Tree, it will answer them.”

An exasperated Serge laughed at Louise's words.

“What a childish superstition. If your wishes were truly granted, your brother would not have died.”

At Serge's words, Louise hugged herself.

It's not a good idea, Lelia stopped him.

“Serge, let's get this over with and get back.”

Well, I don't care what I have to do, because I got what I wanted.

I say a few words to Serge as he tries to pray.

“You're an asshole”

“And?”

I close my eyes to silently say a prayer.

Then—I felt the ground shake.

When I hurriedly opened my eyes, I saw that Louise was emitting a light.

“Eh? Ah, that?”

She doesn't understand what's happening either.

And the emblem on the back of Louis-Se's hand is shining.

“Luxion, what's happening!”

“Unknown.”

Lelia was also checking with Ideal to see what was happening.

“Ideal, what's going on?”

“We are currently investigating. I'm not sure if it's a good idea. No, it speaks to me in my head.”

“Look at the treetops! It's in bloom!”

“It seems that the tree is delivering a message.”

“The plant?”

“It would be better if you didn't think of the Holy Tree as just a plant.

I've got more than that, I've been able to analyze it.' said Luxion, playing back the voice of the holy tree clearly.

It was too horrible to be true.

“Sacrifice your daughter to the flowers blooming in the treetops.”

‘ Sacrifice?’

Quickly, I looked at Louise, who had just shone a light.

Her knees collapsed and she hugged himself.

‘ Louise!’

I pull her up and make her stand, and I immediately tell everyone here in a strong tone of voice.

“Considering the situation in the Republic and what just happened! I have a bad feeling about this.”

“Okay, don't tell anyone when we leave.”

Lelia cringed, as if she hadn't expected it.

“But—”

“It's okay. I'll take care of it. So don't ever tell anyone.”

I was about to hug Louise and go outside when I saw something dazzling.

“I heard voices.”

“You'll be fine. I won't let them sacrifice you. As long as you don't say anything, no one will ever know.”

“No, no. No, no. —No, no, no. —I heard Leon. I hear Leon.”

“—What?”

A trembling Louise said and spilled her tears.



Louise, supported by Leon, heard a voice.

It was a familiar voice.

Her brother Leon's voice.

But that voice was suffering.

"Painful... Sis. . . Help..."

Louise covered her ears, but the voice echoed directly into her head.

From the crest on the back of her right hand, she could hear Leon's voice.

He really looked like he was in pain.

"I'm scared. . . sister—and me. —I miss you. I—I'm all alone in the holy tree.' Louise cried.

"I'm sorry. I'm sorry, Leon. I'll will be able to help you. So—just bear with it a little longer."

She couldn't stop crying as she imagined her little brother trapped in the Holy Tree.

"Sis! I'm inside!"

My brother, who couldn't help himself—is calling me.

For Louise, it was worth the sacrifice. While tears were spilling from her eyes, Ideal speaks to her.

"Are you okay? Do you hear something?"

"I hear my brother's voice."

"What does he sound like."

"He's in pain. I need to help him."

"Even at the expense of yourself?"

At the words of Ideal, Leon realizes what Louise is thinking.

"What are you trying to do?!"

“Hmm. I don’t have enough information. You should hurry out.”

Leon pulls Louise by her hand.

“Louise, please don’t say anything when you go outside, alright?”

He may be trying to protect her, but Louise didn’t want herself protected.

You’re worried about me. But—I’m sorry. I’m going to stand by my brother. It’s the least I can do to make amends.

◇

While everyone was hurrying out. Only Ideal remained at the back of the cave, looking at the stone monument.

He floated around it for a while, until he heard Lelia calling out in the distance.

“Ideal, where are you?!”

Then it began to move slowly.

When he caught up with Lelia and the others, he regained his normal condition.

“Excuse me, Maam. I’m sorry I’m late.”

“What the hell were you doing?”

Chapter 5 – Sacrifice

As we walked outside, the hallway was bustling with activity.

When we left the cave, all eyes were upon us.

-What!?

I was holding Louise in my arms and I felt this situation was bad.

In fact, the eyes of the assembled people spoke for themselves.

Why...

-Could this be the sacrificial girl ...?

-I heard the voice of the tree. This is...

- What are we going to do?

... The people outside could also hear the voice of the Sacred Tree.

I gritted my teeth and then gave Luxon some instructions.

—Luxon, if the worst were to happen ---

[Do you want Louise to escape? If so, the sooner the better. I will prepare a small pod. After that, I can flee to the kingdom of Holfault in Einhorn or Licorn.]

I immediately tried to run away with Louise, but she pulled away from me.

"Thanks, Leon, but everything will be fine now."

-Hey?

Louise was surrounded by armed knights who ran towards her.

The knights also approached Lelia, but Serge threatened them.

"What do you think you're doing?"

"Serge-sama, you will give us that young lady."

"I also have no idea what is happening here, but the Sacred Tree asked for a sacrificial girl. The moment I heard those words, a dazzling light came from inside the cave, if one of these two is the girl to be sacrificed..."

"Don't touch Lelia!"

Louise stopped Serge from trying to fight the knights.

"Wait!"

I saw Alberg-sama running from afar.

But before I could run here ... Louise stepped forward.

"It was I who was chosen as the sacrifice. That girl has nothing to do with this. The knights heard Louise's words and looked at each other.

I grabbed Louise's arm to try to convince her.

-What are you talking about!?

-It's okay. I heard him. My brother, Leon, is suffering inside the Sacred Tree. Didn't you hear Leon's anguished voice in there?

I looked at Luxon, but he moved his eye from side to side in denial.

[I did not hear anything.]

I gripped Louise's arm tightly as she tried to follow the knights.

I didn't know what the hell was going on, but something inside me was screaming at me not to let her go.

-Something is wrong. This is not OK.

Although I tried to persuade her, Louise had already decided.

"I'm sorry I got you involved in these things, but you see, I want to go to my brother's side. I couldn't do anything for him before, but if I can meet that boy one last time, that's fine."

Louise gently released my hand and walked away with the knights.

Then Alberg-Sama grabbed Louise's shoulder.

- Louise, what happened !? Why is it that you are going to sacrifice yourself?

"It is as it is. Father, I'll tell you what happened."

I just stood there, unable to do anything about it.

Serge shoved his hands into his pockets and walked past me.

"Leon, Leon ... that woman really only thinks about her brother, right?"

Is her dead brother that important to her? I do not get it."

Then Serge laughed at me, while I looked stunned.

"If there is a real one, your part in this is over. Now get out of here."

Serge, without feeling the hatred he had felt earlier, called Lelia.

"Lelia, let's go."

"Uh-huh."

The two of them walked away from me.

I don't care what Serge says.

But why would the Sacred Tree ask for a sacrifice?

I haven't heard anything about it from Marie.

Lelia also showed a puzzled look, as if she did not expect it.

... Something was wrong.

It was the same in the kingdom when things didn't work out as in the game, but I felt a disconcerting feeling.

"Luxon, let's find out what's going on."

[When I am with the Master nothing is boring.]

"Something feels weird."

I'll go back to Marie.

[Do you have any clues?]

"My bad feeling was right."

I am not that intuitive.

But a bad feeling was always right.

When I came out of the noisy living room, I took one last look at the tree.

◇

As Lelia and Serge were walking, Emile appeared from the crowd.

His suit was messed, but this didn't bother him as he stomped up to them. "Emile."

Before Lelia could say anything, Emile grabbed Serge.

"Serge, explain yourself! I heard you forced Lelia into the cave. How could you do this to me!?"

Emile was not mad at his fiancée, but Serge on the other hand...

He looked upset.

-You are annoying. I'm busy, my father is calling me.

Serge was also present when Louise was chosen to be the sacrifice.

Alberg had called Serge to hear the details.

The expression on Serge's face, who thought what happened next was troublesome, must have seemed silly to Emile.

"Is this how you're going to escape?"

Emile grabbed Serge by the chest with his small body, but due to the difference in size, he was easily pushed away.

"Whoa."

Lelia ran to Emile, who was thrown.

When Serge saw her, he got angry and said something that would strain their relationship.

"Come to me when you get tired of that pitiful fellow Lelia. I will always welcome you. You'd rather have someone trustworthy like me, right? --- I will invite you again next time. We will have fun."

At those words, Emile looked at Lelia.

Lelia felt something suspicious, but remembered that she had been kissed in the cave.

Thus, she couldn't strongly deny it.

Serge left without any further problem, but Lelia and Emile stayed behind.

Emile gripped both Lelia's shoulders tightly.

"Lelia, you need to tell me the truth." Did something happen between you and Serge !?

"N-Nothing happened."

-Look me in the eyes. I, I ...!

Emile started to cry, but Lelia felt some eyes staring at her and she

looked around her. A group of onlookers gathered around them.

"Could it be young Emile of the Pleven family?"

"Isn't that girl from the Lespinasse house?"

"Well, then the conversation with Serge earlier was ..."

They were whispering and talking around her, Lelia felt embarrassed so she grabbed Emile's hand and stood up.

With things going like this, she left.

However, Emile was in no mood to do so.

"Lelia, you have to answer me directly!"

Such Emile was annoying to Lelia.

-That's enough!

"... Lelia?"

"I really don't like when you're like this, Emile. Always acting proper, yet always doubting me. Nothing happened, so trust me."

"B-But that you were both in the cave was too much! You said you would come in with me! You can't do that in front of everyone. This is like Serge is making fun of me. I am also one of the faces of the six noble families. This makes me look bad!"

Lelia's impression was cold.

That is too much of a stretch. What is the appearance of a nobleman in the first place? You should worry about me. That's dumb.

For Lelia, the appearance of the nobility that Emile valued was something that was difficult to understand.

Due to her previous life experience, she could not find any value in such things. And Emile seemed to value that more than her.

Lelia could feel the feelings she had for Emile cooling rapidly.

I chose Emile for my future ... but I may have been wrong.

-Yes. You care more about your appearance than you do about me.

"Lelia?"

"If you want to fight Serge, you can. But I will despise you Emile. This is stupid."

"W-Why !?

"Don't say why!! You are driving me crazy! Stop making excuses like that."

Because I don't want to hear any more of those excuses.

Forgetting what she originally intended to do here, Lelia left Emile behind.

Emile was lying on his stomach and she felt miserable when she saw him.

Why did I choose Emile? It might have been better if I chose Serge from the beginning.

I returned to Marie's mansion and told her about the events of the New Years Festival, and how Louise had been chosen to be a sacrifice.

I also told her that she had heard the voice of her dead brother suffering, which motivated her to want to be sacrificed.

Marie looked like she didn't understand anything.

"Why would she volunteer to be sacrificed if her dead brother was suffering? Isn't it weird?"

If you ask me, it didn't make any sense.

-I do not know. But I think it is too much to accept being a sacrifice just because her brother died.

We were in an unused room, with Luxon and Clare also in the meeting.

This talk was something that the others couldn't hear, so it was more like a secret meeting.

-Well wait. I don't remember there being any sacrifice in the second game.

Mainly, the purpose is to show the people around her that she is dating the boy who became her lover at the New Years Festival.

"What was Louise's role? What happened next in the story? What happens in the story after that?"

I asked question after question, but Marie sensed my impatience and answered honestly.

-All right. I think it's okay if you stop this from happening.

I don't remember the details, but there is no way Louise will be chosen as a sacrifice, because in the end she will be doomed.

Leaving aside the story of being condemned, it is not possible that Louise, who has that role to play until the end, is narratively sacrificed.

In that case, there is a complete irregularity.

"... What the heck happened? Do we need to do something about it ...?"

I put my hand over my mouth to think about it, and Clare scoffed at me.

[Aren't they getting involved again? That said, if we're going to save her, let's do it

quickly. We'll end up doing it anyway, right?]

From the beginning I had intended to save her.

I'm not going to let her be a sacrifice.

But the problem is that she has already accepted the idea of sacrificing

herself.

It will not be easy to convince her.

Are we going to have to force her out?

"Let's sneak her out and see what happens." Luxon, we'll get out of here soon ... Luxon? He was less receptive than usual.

Luxon's attitude was different than usual.

He was very cautious.

Before, he would have had the luxury of being able to simply destroy the new humans at any time.

[Teacher, I have some bad news.]

-Bad?

[Louise's rescue has a low success rate.]

-... What do you mean? Even you can't do it?

What do you mean that the success rate is low?

[I cannot fulfill the condition of secretly taking it out. This is because of Ideal.]

-Ideal? What about him?

[The security equipment manufactured by Ideal has been used in the mansion. I have also confirmed that defense equipment has been installed.]

"Hey, didn't you think Lelia would turn against you ?!

Did Lelia betray us?

No, in the case of that chick, he's hostile to Louise in her position.

Did you think it would be better if it disappeared?

But she's not that clever.

For better or for worse, she carries on with her previous life just like me.

When Marie heard Ideal's name, she asked for a detailed story.

The second game ... Marie didn't pay the bills and didn't know much about Ideal.

"Ideal, you mean the cheat level battleship from the second game, right?

What's he like? Luxon explained it briefly, but inexplicably seemed to have some doubts."

[It's a transport ship created by old humanity. However, the possibility has arisen that they have a greater intelligence gathering ability than I do.

This is not natural.]

Clare had the same question.

[Does a transport ship need that kind of performance? But why doesn't my data show that?]

[I'm also confused. He has recently dated, and I can only say that he has been hiding from me until now, and that considers him a threat.]

With the arrival of Ideal, we could not move as easily as before.

Just when I think we have someone troublesome on our hands, Marie asks me for a solution.

"Brother, what do we do now? It's getting harder and harder to get in and out, right? If you screw up, won't it be a kind of international problem for which there will be no excuse?

"Things have gotten more difficult, haven't they?"

If I had to say a problem, it is that for the Alzer Republic when the Sacred

Tree is involved, it becomes a ritual.

Even if it is a sacrifice, it is the Republic that offers it if the Sacred Tree demands it. Even if I try to help Louise, it will surely interfere with me.

"Oh!" So why don't you make Luxon and the others burn the flowers of the holy tree? And then maybe the sacrifice talk would go away?

"I wish I could, but I can't ...

Luxon moved his eye to the side.

[Ideal's defensive team has been set up. If we take action, if we attack the Sacred Tree, there will be a big problem between the Kingdom and the Republic.]

Marie's head jerked when she heard that Ideal was on the road.

- Then what should we do !?

I don't know that and that's why I'm in trouble.

Luxon asked my opinion.

[Master, what do you want to do? If we're going to fight Ideal, we won't lose, but he'll also hurt us. Furthermore, there are many unknowns in Ideal's performance.]

--- In other words, it could be dangerous even for me with Luxon.

I was thinking of the worst case scenario.

It's a hostile situation with Ideal.

I don't care if it's against Lelia, but it's not good if it's against Ideal.

Should we have a card up our sleeve for that case?

"I'm going to gather information first." And then ... if I can't infiltrate, I'll just go head-on. Marie, find me if you remember anything. Luxon will come with me. And Clare ---

[What's going on?]

"You are going back to the kingdom."

[... Eh?]

"Think about it, you're useless now." Come find me when Anjie and Livia get back. So, goodbye. For once, Luxon agreed with me.

[It certainly won't be a problem if I'm here. Let Clare work in the kingdom.] When we told her to go home, Clare was hinted at and showed resistance. [Wait! I don't want to be the only one left out!]

-See you!

[Stupid master!]

Marie reached her hand out to Clare as she left the room, crying.

"W-Wait! Brother, are you sure you want her to go back? I think Clare is quite helpful."

-I know what I'm doing. Luxon, walk.

-Yes Master.

◇

The six great nobles were having an emergency meeting.

The matter of Louise being chosen as a sacrifice was on the agenda, and all five, except for Alberg, agreed.

"Are they going to sacrifice my daughter?"

The decision of the six great nobles is that they would hand over Louise if the Sacred Tree wishes. There were no doubts there.

For the Six Great Nobles, no, for the people of the Republic, the Sacred Tree was that sacred.

Lambert looked amusedly at Alberg's disrepair.

"If she's been chosen by the Sacred Tree, shouldn't you be happy to offer her to it? I'm jealous."

Behind the lines of envy and other heartless lines, Alberg's dependency could be seen.

As Alberg painfully grasped his hands together, the other heads of the family began to talk about the future.

"But nothing like this has happened before. This event should be well documented."

"We will need people from the Six Great Houses." We will also need an escort for Miss Louise. She intends to sacrifice herself, but we can't make her change her mind at the last minute.

"Then we will send guards from the other houses."

Alberg was angry that the meeting continued without him.

He had taken the initiative to join the conversation, including Fernand, whom he had once adored.

He seems to be desperate to build a new relationship abandoned by Alberg. And he was trying to get everything fully prepared to sacrifice Louise.

"Ladies and gentlemen, there is one more thing we should know. It's about the hero of the Kingdom."

Some of the heads of the families nodded when the topic of Leon came up.

"Why do we need to discuss him?"

This is the problem of the Republic.

"That foreigner has nothing to do with this."

However, Fernand had been beaten by Leon and was quite cautious.

"He is close with Louise personally."

"What about it?"

The other heads of the families still had a questioning expression on their faces.

"The reason was, if Leon messed with the Republic for that level of things, it would be a big problem."

Ordinary nobles wouldn't rescue Louise for that level of reason.

However, there was a head of a family who agreed with Fernand.

It was the Barriere family, which had been hurt by Leon.

"Fernand is right."

Alberg, who had been silent until now, laughed in his mind, thinking that he hoped Leon would help them.

That's probably why ... he didn't want the other heads of the families to be too alarmed.

"I don't think I'll try to do anything."

When Alberg said that, Bellange glared at him.

"This is how I lowered my guard, and that guy hurt me!"

But the heads of the families, who had not been injured by Leon, seemed cold.

"That's your story, right?"

"He won't do anything."

If Leon makes a move, this trend isn't bad for Alberg. Plus, it could force Louise to go back.

Okay, this is the way to go ...

But Lambert, Fernand, and Bellange, whom Leon had beaten so badly, made a strong statement.

"He's insane! It is impossible to know what he is going to do!"

People around him felt sorry for Leon when Lambert called him insane.

However, Fernand agreed with them.

"It's too late to do anything about it. We need to be prepared."

Bellange looked at Alberg.

-Yes. Some people would fight if it was their cute daughter. I don't think the acting president would do that, but we need to be careful.

Alberg clicked his tongue internally.

As a man who cut off his own son so easily, you wouldn't know.

Alberg knew the nobles here didn't understand how much he cared for Louise. It's because it's more of an anomaly for a noble like him.

However, some of the heads of the families did not think that Leon would make a move, and the conversation about weaponry was half-hearted.

Fernand and Bellange had a bitter expression on their faces, while Alberg was worried about what the outcome of this would be.

Louise, I'll bring you back no matter what ...

◇

At the Rault family castle, Louise was lying on her bed.

It had been a few days since she returned from the New Years Festival, but she was tired, as if she hadn't rested well.

Sitting next to the bed were Alberg and his wife, his parents.

His mother was wiping away her tears.

-How...? How can it be possible !? Why do they have to take Louise from us after Leon? Why are they taking all my children !?

Louise held her mother's tearful hand and smiled.

"It's okay, mother." Leon is waiting for me.

She also had that same expression.

She imagined the scene when her brother Leon got sick and couldn't get out of bed. That alone made her heart ache.

He was a good boy, who suffered, but despite that he cared about the people around him.

With a brother like that ... Louise couldn't do anything to help him.

That has always been a burden and regret for Louise.

In fact, he felt incapable of not being able to do anything to wield the great power of the Sacred Tree as one of the six great nobles.

Alberg crossed his hands and made a harsh sound.

"... There is no record of the Sacred Tree flourishing or calling for a sacrifice." Louise, I won't let them put you down or whatever.

"Father ... you can't stop this, can you? Heard there was a meeting shortly after that. The knights from the other houses have come to our castle to watch over me, haven't they?"

The knights and soldiers of the other five families had been sent to the Rault castle as Louise's guards.

It's an escort on the surface, but it's actually surveillance.

Alberg looked down at her helplessly.

"They all agreed except me. It is true that most decided to sacrifice you."

"Are you going to let Louise die like this !?

As his mother moaned through tears, Alberg slowly got up.

There was determination in his expression.

"Father, no." I will be sacrificed. Leon is waiting for me.

"... Even if Leon is alone and trapped in the Sacred Tree, I can't bear to sacrifice you." Even if I have to fight the other five families, I will definitely stop it.

When Alberg opened the door to leave the room, a butler entered.

- Alberg-Sama! The ... Count Baltfault is here to see you.

-What?

There were no plans to meet with him and there wasn't an original need, but Alberg decided to meet Leon.

-Very well. Send him to my office.

◇

They took me to Alberg-Sama's office.

As I sat on the couch, he told me the general situation.

... I wonder if he really is a villain or if he is thinking of starting a war for his daughter.

Well, people will not be happy if you start a war for that reason.

If one person's sacrifice is enough to complete it, it is human to turn a blind eye. But I don't hate it.

- War? It is not peaceful.

"... When you become a father, you will understand." No, if you are a noble, you should be able to point out that I am wrong in my judgment. I

am certainly wrong.

Still, we go to war.

"You go to war for your daughter ... I don't hate it."

-I did not expect it. I thought that you, a gentleman from abroad, would ask me to sacrifice my daughter.

That's impossible.

Since it is unorthodox, you choose one person to sacrifice many.

"You're the type of person who prefers people you know to strangers."

See, it's unorthodox, right?

- Hahaha! I see. It is your way of life. You're right it's unorthodox. I am not averse to that. But as a custodian of my country, I am not qualified.

- And you would go to war for that?

Honestly, the benefits of making the sacrifice are unknown.

And we don't even know the downsides of not doing it.

From the Republic's point of view, it was scary to think that the Sacred Tree could take away the benefits they had gained so far from being in a bad mood.

The decision to keep the sacrifice as intended is not necessarily a mistake. But I do not like.

"I couldn't do anything about it when I lost my son." But now it is different. I would start a war to protect my daughter, even if it meant that I just did it.

"It's one against five." They outnumber us.

-Of course. But the balance in my mind, between the country and my daughter, it leaned towards my daughter. That's it.

I realized there was no point in saying anything in front of his keen eyes.

It would not be good to line up beautiful things.

People will suffer! But I think he would respond by saying, "So what!"

I shrugged and showed him.

"So what if there's a way to do it that doesn't involve war?"

Alberg-Sama seemed to have guessed what he was thinking.

- Do you think you will take Louise? Can you make it work? If you fail, you will be a wanted person.

-Do not worry. Actually, I'm pretty good at this.

-I know.

I thought he would be concerned about my abilities, but he seems to have developed a strange kind of confidence.

...I do not know what to think.

Don't you think I'm a coward who's good at hiding behind your back?

"So what are you going to do about it?"

"First of all, can you help me with one thing?"

-Help you? Yes.

-Thank you. Now can you tell me your son's story, Leon?

◇

When Leon left Alberg's room, the butler entered the room. "Alberg-Sama, Count Baltfault has been sent to Miss Louise's room."

-... I see.

Alberg looked out the window and answered the butler's question.

"Your will to go to war hasn't changed, has it?"

-I know. Sorry about this, but nothing will stop me now.

"Even Count Baltfault couldn't persuade you, could he?"

"Could the butler convince me what Mr. Leon couldn't?"

He seemed to be thinking like that.

Alberg smiled a little ...

"Alberg-Sama?"

"We will continue preparations for war, but from here it will depend on the count."

"Is there something planned?"

"I can't say now.... However, he is truly unorthodox."

After listening to Leon's suggestion, Alberg was able to understand why he was called unorthodox. He felt ashamed of himself for trusting Leon like this.

-Unorthodox? But Count Baltfault doesn't seem like someone unorthodox, does he?

"You'll find out soon."

Why are only my children sacrificed?

Isn't Alberg being cursed by the Sacred Tree?

Could it be for the crime of destroying the Lespinasse house?

This is how he was thinking.



Louise was surprised to see Leon visiting her room.

-Leon? Why are you here?

"I'm here to see you. You look very tired."

Leon sat in a chair near the bed and placed a fruit on the table.

Louise replied with a smile.

"Won't I look more beautiful if I was thinner?"

"I think a healthy woman is more beautiful. You're not sleeping, are you?"

Louise turned to face Leon, who instantly saw through her condition.

His expression darkened.

"I dream every night. I am trapped in the Sacred Tree and my brother is asking for help and I can't do anything."

Louise covered her face with her hands and remembered when her brother died.

"There was nothing I could do when my brother suffered. I didn't realize that he was suffering after being in the Sacred Tree for more than ten years ... My brother has been alone all this time, crying because no one is with him."

Leon listened in silence to Louise's story.

When Louise let out a sob, he gently rubbed her back.

-It was difficult. Do you dream about it every time you fall asleep?

Louise nodded and told him that she couldn't see her brother suffer in his dreams.

- "Come here," Leon called. At the very least, he should be there for her, since... the situation was bad. "... You really loved your brother, didn't you?"

-Yes. I have to admit that I was surprised when I first saw you. He looked so much like you that it made me wonder if Leon would have looked like this if he was still alive.

She only knew him as a young man, but somehow she felt that when he grew up, Leon would have been just like me.

It wasn't just Louise, her parents thought the same way.

-It's strange. It is so strange that now you are showing up and my brother is asking me for help.

Louise felt there was something fateful about it.

Leon listened to her without making fun of it.

"Are we really that similar? But from what I can tell, he's not like me. I was a good and modest boy. A shy and reserved child."

Hearing the way Leon spoke made Louise miss him.

"The way you say it, the way you spit those lies, you really do sound like him." But yeah, Leon stood out more? Oh, I wonder if that's just because it is you, Leon. You've been in the Republic for less than a year and you're already a celebrity.

"The people around me won't leave me alone."

He was like her brother, after all.

Louise had realized that when she spoke to Leon.

Having the guardian emblem, saving Noelle from Loic ... if Leon were here, I'm sure he would have done the same as you.

Louise moved closer to Leon's face and touched his cheek.

At that moment Leon did what he came to do.

"Can you tell me a story about your brother?"

-All right. I will tell you lots of funny stories about my brother because I am afraid to go to sleep. Well, I'll start with her ...

◇

Louise was lying on the bed, breathing sleepily.

Luxon appeared next to me.

[Teacher, I used a potion to put Louise to sleep. She should be able to sleep without dreaming.]

"You are very useful." So what about the hassles?

While listening to Louise's story, Luxon was exploring the interior of the castle. [I'm afraid, with Ideal's defense team, it won't be easy to get her out of here.]

"Oh, is it possible that Ideal is better than you?"

[Although we are losing in certain areas, we are winning overall. It would be a mistake to judge our superiority by seeing only part of the image.]

Apparently he cares.

But, my goodness.

From the way he puts it, Luxon is losing to Ideal in certain areas.

Even if Luxon is superior in terms of overall skill, Ideal's strength is unknown at the moment.

It is also possible that Luxon would lose.

"I wonder why Ideal has put his defense team here."

When I mumbled a simple question, Luxon seemed curious.

[Isn't it because Lelia ordered it? Or it could be that it has nothing to do with Louise's case.] "That needs to be confirmed too." Okay let's go. It is getting dark.

I spent the night listening to the story, but thanks to that I learned a lot.

Luxon, who knew what I was going to do, asked me if I was really going to continue like this.

[Master, are you sure about that? Louise will hate it.]

I am very sure of that.

-Better! If that person survives, no problem.

[It's really very clumsy, isn't it, Master?]

I don't want a clumsy artificial intelligence to tell me.

◇

It was after Leon left the castle.

Serge was lying on the bed in his room.

"... Tsk, what should we do?"

It was almost a given that Louise would be euthanized at the New Years Festival.

As for Serge, he wasn't too interested in the story of the sacrifice to the Holy Tree.

Yet he was curious about Louise.

As he looked up at the ceiling, he thought of the day he first saw Louise. He kept remembering that day.

"If I save her, will I be recognized too?"

If I help her, will she recognize me as part of her family?

Feeling that way, Serge got up and scratched his head roughly.

"What's the point now?" All they want is a replacement for their dead brother. That's right, it's always Leon this, Leon that.

As a child, Louise had enjoyed her life talking about Leon.

And I was sad because Leon was not here, and the atmosphere in the castle was somewhat dark. Serge had thought he had been brought here as a replacement for Leon.

That was also true.

The Rault family, who wanted an heir, adopted Serge, who is from a branch of the family, as their son.

... As a replacement for Leon.

"I won't be able to be part of the family now ...

Somewhere, you want to be recognized as a member of the family, but you can't sort out your feelings.

Then Serge was greeted by Ideal.

[Goodnight.]

-It's you? What are you doing here?

[Nothing, I'm here to tell you that I've found some interesting information.]

"Do you think it's funny? I'm not in the mood to listen to any funny stories right now.

Ideal approaches Serge, who was lying down again.

[Oh? Is it sad that your first love, Louise, was chosen as a sacrifice?] At that moment, Serge grabbed Ideal with one hand.

He squeezed it so hard he could hear a creak.

With his bloodshot eyes and veins sticking out on his forehead.

The deranged Serge was about to destroy Ideal with all his might at any

moment.

-... What did you just say?

[There is no point in destroying the cordless extension. Even if you destroy it, the replacement unit will be activated immediately. Oh well, by the way, check this out.]

As the light emanated from the red lens, it projected an image onto the wall. There was a picture of Alberg talking to Leon.

They seemed to have a lot of fun talking to each other.

"W-What is this?"

[The video was taken a few hours ago.]

-... What did you say? I haven't heard anything!

[I guess the castle people didn't inform you. The count looks like Alberg's dead son. Furthermore, it was known that he had a dispute with Master Serge.]

Unbeknownst to him, Leon had walked in and was talking to Alberg about something. Seeing him was strangely annoying for Serge.

He has never shown me a face like that before.

The expression he usually saw on Alberg's face was an angry or troublesome expression.

He felt somewhat distant.

But what about her expression towards Leon? He did not feel cautious.

As he cracked his back teeth, the image changed.

[This is a video of Louise's room. It seems like he's having a lot of fun.]

The smile Louise showed Leon was the smile he saw that day, the smile he saw as a child.

It was the smile that captivated him.

But now this smile was no longer directed towards him.

The gleam in Serge's eyes faded, and he stared at the image as it grew weaker. "... Do you really want a man who looks so much like your brother?"

Ideal then reported on the content of their conversation.

[This is the audio of the two.]

Louise and Leon's conversation replayed.

"It's like I'm really having a conversation with my brother. That was fun, Leon."

"I had a good time too."

"Really --- you are --- than my brother."

That was where the audio stuttered.

[Oh, there is some noise in the audio data. It needs to be improved.]

Before he knew it, Serge had thrown Ideal.

He then looked up at the ceiling and laughed.

- LOL!

[Master Serge?]

"It's nothing, sorry." I'm glad you showed me. You are right, this is interesting information. I knew he was just a scapegoat for this house ...

shit!

Serge, who was laughing, got up and kicked a nearby piece of furniture.

He rampaged and began to devastate her room.

Seeing that figure, Ideal, called Serge.

[However, the interesting part was not here. In fact, Mr. Leon has a lost object that is just like me. Look, here, here.]

-... What do you mean?

[He is the cause of Leon's rampage in the Republic. As for me, I am one of them, so I want to get along with him. No, but he's an amazing person to take someone of my kind and fight the Republic.]

Serge didn't know much about Leon.

He was a foreign student, and he was only aware of the fact that he did something a bit remarkable.

This was due to the fact that the people in the castle did not talk to Serge about Leon as much as possible.

"Have you fought with the Republic?"

[Didn't you really know? Since then he has studied in the Republic and has destroyed two of them, Pierre of the House of Faiviel and Loic of the House of Barriere, with the power of Lost Objects. He is a very radical man.]

Serge realized now that he learned nothing about it since he returned.

-Why didn't anyone tell me!?

[I don't know either. Besides, didn't Miss Lelia know? It is widely known in the Republic. The "Evil Knight" of the Kingdom.]

-Diabolical? Hey, so my dad... No, did Alberg seem to have a good conversation with that guy? He is almost an enemy of the Republic!

[Yes sir. I understand that he has the face of his son, and you cannot hate him for the damage he would do to the Republic.]

Serge was fed up with everything.

"What the hell, that ..."

More than the adopted son that I am, even if he is the enemy, the whole family together accepts him. And with me they don't!

Serge decides on one thing.

"Hey, Ideal. Help me with something.".

[It is understood.]

Serge saw Leon's reflection on the wall.

"People who go crazy with lost objects need to be punished, right?"

He was someone he could have easily defeated at the New Years Festival. Serge thought that if he wasn't around, he too could do whatever he wanted.

Chapter 6 - Support Ship Ideal

It was a few days after the New Years Festival.

It was time to return to the kingdom, and Livia faced Anjie in an awkward atmosphere.

There were only two people in the room, and no one came in for a while due to a nifty Cordelia.

Even though Livia was depressed, she summoned her courage in front of Anjie and called out to her. "U-Uhm!"

"Livia, I don't think ---

But they both called at the same time and there was another pause.

The two clumsy people looked at each other annoyed.

Then their faces started to show a funny expression.

At the same time, they were able to understand the wish that they wanted to forgive each other. When they smiled, Anjie spoke to her.

"I'm sorry I caused you so much trouble. You are right about Noelle's situation. I ignored her feelings. I'm sorry."

Livia shook her head at Anjie's apology.

"I shouldn't have done that. I didn't even consider your position and said something like that. Besides, I knew you had a lot on your mind."

They had disagreed with each other about Noelle's case and now they were going to reconcile. However, Anjie's stance remained the same.

-I'm sorry. But I still think that Noelle should go to the Kingdom.

"For the good of the country, right?"

-That too.

-That too?

When Livia nodded her head, Anjie spoke about Noelle's future.

By having a ridiculous treasure called the little sapling of the Sacred Tree, Noelle, who was chosen as the priestess, has become something that all countries desire.

"From now on, Noelle will be wanted for the rest of her life as she is someone of great value."

-I know.

"No, I don't think you know exactly what's going on."

Anjie seems to think that Livia's perception was still naive.

"... People are creatures who can be cruel in any measure. And they will do anything to get the most outrageous winnings hanging in front of them."

"Anjie?"

Anjie shook her head.

"I don't want to go into details either. But the worst that can happen to Noelle is hell waiting for her. It's not good for her, but what do you think would happen if another country took her away and made her unhappy?"

"I-I don't think it's ..."

Livia didn't want to think about it too much either, but Noelle would be unhappy.

However, Anjie was worried beyond that.

"If Noelle is unhappy, then Leon will worry. That's the kind of man he is. I don't want to see Leon suffer."

Livia was embarrassed to learn that Anjie was thinking of Leon.

-I'm sorry. I just didn't think you were thinking so much.

"Unfortunately, I only recently started to think this way. At first I didn't think much about it. I also feel guilty."

When Livia looked down, Anjie hugged her.

Livia also put her hand on Anjie's back.

Anjie whispered in Livia's ear.

"Honestly, I didn't want another woman next to Leon, either." But that guy attracts trouble, you know? I don't want to make Noelle unhappy, even as an individual. And as a nobleman, I can't leave Noelle unattended either."

"I feel the same as you."

-Forgive me. Even though I know you won't like it, there is no choice but to keep Noelle by Leon's side. I cannot take her back to the Kingdom of Holfault and hand her over to the Royal Court.



When Livia nodded, Anjie's face moved closer.

Continuing like this, their lips met.

◇

Yumeria, who was cleaning the front door of the mansion, looked out at the good weather. "It's another beautiful day ~

Being tired, Yumeria wanted to take a nap.

But she shook her face and turned her attention to her work.

-I should not. If I don't work hard, Kyle will be mad at me again. Let's go!

When he went back to cleaning, a woman came through the door.

There was a blue sphere nearby.

"Huh?" Mr. Luxon?

While she was confused, Lelia spoke.

"Hey, are you Leon and Marie?"

Yumeria was surprised when asked and nodded many times.

"T-They are.... I mean... they are here!"

"Well, go get them. Just say that Lelia is here."

"Y-Yes!"

Overwhelmed and in a hurry to get back to the mansion, Yumeria slipped as she turned around.

"Ouch!"

"H-Hey, are you okay?"

-I'm sorry. I'm a bit clumsy.

"You are Yumeria, right? You can take your time, but can you call those two anyway?"

-... Yes.

Yumeria got up, shook her skirt with her hand, and hurried over despite being told not to.

"H-Hey don't rush! Ideal, what happened."

[... No, it's nothing. The elf woman here was called Yumeria, right?]

As Yumeria entered the mansion, she could no longer hear their conversation.

The story will continue whether I'm there or not.

◇

Noelle sat on the stairs, hugging the jar that held the sapling.

Beside Noelle was Marie, who had become her friend.

Marie, who knew what was going on, followed Noelle.

"You'll be fine if you leave it to Leon. More importantly, what do you plan to do in the future, Noelle?"

Noelle, who was hugging the vial, didn't seem to have made up her mind yet.

"What can I say? I don't think it's right for me for Leon to take care of me. Because, having two fiancees, do you think it's okay for me to do that?"

"He ruined your wedding. He owes it to you."

-It's not that.

Noelle, who disagreed with Marie's extreme comments, still seemed to

be worried about Leon.

"Well, take your time to think about it." There is still time.

While saying that, Marie was internally impatient.

I can't leave Noelle alone, however my brother says to leave it to him, what should I really do!? Heavens, nothing goes as planned!

As Marie tried to figure out how to move, Yumeria knocked on the door.

"Ah, Miss Marie!" Y-You have a visitor!

-I?

"No, they asked me to call Mr. Leon too, so I'm going to his room now."

I-I'm retiring ... ah!

A nervous Yumeria stumbled on the stairs and hit her knee, then felt the pain. Noelle picked up Yumeria.

"Hey, are you okay?"

"I-I'm fine. The visitor wanted me to hurry, so I have to hurry."

Marie didn't mind keeping the guests waiting.

After all, if someone called her and Leon, it's obvious who that person is.

It was Lelia, who came running from the door, and was now with her arms crossed.

Beside him was the figure of Ideal, who had been listening to the conversation. When Yumeria went to Leon's room, Noelle went downstairs and approached Lelia. "Lelia, what are you doing here? Hey? Why is there a little Luxon-like thing here?"

Ideal spoke to Noelle, who seemed curious, in a friendly way.

[Nice to meet you, Miss Noelle. I am Ideal. I am... well, I am the same

species type as Luxon. From now on, I look forward to working with you.]

"Uh, ah, yeah."

Noelle was confused about how Lelia had an item just like Luxon.

Marie was not surprised, but from Noelle's point of view there were nothing but questions. "You always come so suddenly."

As Marie made a disgusted face, Lelia ran a hand through her hair back.

"I thought I told you earlier that I would talk to Leon." More importantly, what the hell is going on?

Since she couldn't speak with Noelle there, Marie urged her to wait in the back room. "Wait in the living room." Leon will be here in a minute.

-Well, I'll wait. In the meantime, I'd like to talk to my sister.

Lelia said, then grabbed Noelle's hand and headed to the back of the room. Marie was upset by his attitude.

- ... What does that girl think Noelle is?

◇

Noelle, who came to the reception room, was surprised to hear Lelia's story. "Stay in the Republic?"

She did not ask her to stay.

It was an order to stay.

-It is so. I don't think you're going to do well in a foreign country, and you're safer in the Republic to begin with. I'll protect you.

"I'll protect you," Noelle felt a lack of respect for his attitude.

"You say that just because you're engaged to Emile."

"It's not about Emile. I will protect you myself."

-What do you mean? It's Emile who's going to protect us, right? I can understand that as well as you.

Noelle thought Lelia was being optimistic because she was engaged to Emile. However, Lelia didn't seem to trust Emile.

"I don't care about Emile anymore."

"What do you mean you don't care about Emile? Are you two fighting, by any chance?"

Maybe it was an instinctive feeling as sisters, but Noelle had guessed from Lelia's appearance that she and Emile had had a fight.

That seemed like a perfect guess.

-It is none of your business.

-Of course yes. I don't know what's going on here, but I don't think Emile is going to do anything. What did you do?

Lelia's expression clouded, as if Noelle had hit the target.

Noelle was sure when she saw that Lelia had looked away from her.

-I knew it.

-It is none of your business! Besides, I don't need Emile anymore.

"What do you mean you don't need him? You're the one who made that mistake with Emi" --- When the sisters started arguing, a knock came from the door.

The two of them turned their gazes in that direction and saw Leon with Luxon.

"Well, they're here, so let's stop fighting."

Behind him was also Marie.

"Who are you to tell that to us?" Those are not the kind of lines you get from someone who is always fighting.

"I'm a pacifist. I do not like fights."

-Yes. You are good at it!

Noelle and Lelia were feeling stupid and stopped arguing when they saw Leon and Marie looking at each other with smiles on their faces.

Lelia crossed her arms and told Noelle to leave the room.

"I need to talk to Leon and the others, so you have to go."

-Why? Why do you always make me look like I'm a complete stranger?

-Just go away!

And so Noelle was kicked out of the room by Lelia.

◇

"I see you have a lot of attitude towards your sister."

I looked at Lelia, who forced Noelle out, and was appalled.

The Lelia of now had gained great power and had become arrogant.

"You better stop talking like that just because you've gained power."

Hearing my advice Lelia seemed disgusted, but it was Luxon who was surprised at me. [Master, you've always told me to look in the mirror when I talk like that.]

The same was for Marie.

"Brother, how can you say those words to someone else when they also apply to you? Are you not ashamed of yourself? I'm ashamed to be your sister."

Why does Marie have to tell me all that?

"You are in no condition to tell me what to do!" --- Well, it doesn't matter.

Lelia said "Hey!" And then he blamed me for my attitude.

However, there is no point in talking about it, so we quickly got to the point. "Lelia, why did you set up Ideal's defenses in the Rault house?"

When I asked the question, Lelia cocked her head.

-What are you talking about?

Marie put her left hand on her hip and pointed at Lelia and Ideal with her right hand.

"We can't help Louise because you guys did something unnecessary!

Just take those defenses out of the way.

Lelia didn't really know, but she showed her combative attitude towards Marie.

"I don't know what you're talking about! Don't blame me. Also, I didn't know about Louise's case and I didn't come visit you to discuss it."

Marie and I didn't see this coming.

[That would narrow down the culprits.]

Luxon's red eye went to Ideal.

[So, Ideal ...]

[I-I'm sooooo sorry!]

Lelia was surprised that he had suddenly apologized to her.

-Hey what's up?

[Actually, it was Lord Serge's order to provide a defense team.]

—Serge? Hey, I am your Master!

Lelia didn't seem to understand either.

However, Ideal was also confused.

[Hey? No, I registered both of them as my masters at the time.

Therefore, the two people who can give me orders are Lelia-sama and Serge-sama.]

-... You're lying.

Lelia seemed to hear it for the first time and was shocked.

She got a cheat battleship, but the other guy also had the right to give it orders; you probably didn't expect this dilemma.

That is why she was worried.

"Of all people, Serge?" It is the worst option to pass power to someone like him.

He is the type of person who would hit someone out of nowhere. I do not like it.

Marie was in a good mood then, because the matter was simple.

"But it's resolved, isn't it?" Lelia, order them to get rid of the defense team as soon as possible.

-Well well. Ideal, please.

[I can not.]

-Eh?

Ideal rejected her as if it were natural.

[Unfortunately, Miss Lelia and Mr. Serge have the same power. I cannot revoke the orders of one side without reason.]

I turned my gaze to Luxon.

-What is he saying?

[The artificial intelligence of the military has a different chain of command than mine. Isn't it also a standard when it comes to property?]

More importantly, this would allow us to secure Louise if we only destroyed the defense equipment.]

I think we can avoid a fight with Ideal.

"The problem is Serge." I heard you have a problem with your family.

I looked at Lelia and she looked away from me to see if she had an idea.

"He was adopted and taken in by the Rault family." I heard that he didn't fit in and wanted to be part of a genuine family.

"... From my point of view, it's an enviable family."

It's no use comparing families, but without a doubt, the Rault family is the overwhelming winner when it comes to having an older sister.

Damn ... how much better my life would have been if Louise-san was my sister.

However, for Lelia, the Rault family is the enemy.

She didn't have good feelings for them.

-Where? Serge told me. "I'm the only one they don't recognize as their family." I think they just wanted an heir. They are so selfish that they don't care if their children are dead or not.

However, from my point of view, they were kind people.

I remembered Mr. Alberg, who was even trying to start a war for his daughter.

"... Well, I don't care what you think." Anyway, Serge is going to be an adversary in this matter, right? Whose side are you going to be on, Ideal?

Serge is likely to become the enemy.

And if that's the case ... Ideal is a danger.

Sensing the meaning of my gaze, Ideal flicked his eye sideways as if to say "oh dear". This part of him is the same as Luxon's.

[Normally I would like to avoid acts that prioritize one over the other, but circumstances are circumstances. I will not supply more forces.

However, that is all I can do. I cannot take away the strength that Master Serge has.]

"You just have to promise me that and we'll be fine. We will take care of this problem ourselves."

Well that solves the problem.

The only thing left to do is how to get Louise back.

Thinking that Louise's problem was solved, Lelia raised another topic.

"Then let's talk about my sister. I will be clear. Now that Ideal is here, I have the power to protect my sister. I don't need to trust you guys."

Marie tugged at Lelia's cheeks.

"You, don't get carried away. If my brother gets serious, you will be defeated."

Why does this chick overestimate me?

I don't want to fight Ideal.

However, Lelia did not show the same confusion as before, perhaps because she felt more confident after obtaining Ideal.

"Oh, can you do it?" Ideal is a warship. Luxon is an immigrant ship, right? Would it even be a fight?

Then Luxon, who had been silent until now, spoke quickly.

[Oh? I'm surprised that Lelia can analyze our strength. First of all, do you know my original function? You are very confident that you are going to win even when you don't really know it. Also, Ideal is a supply ship, even if it is a warship. If I had to explain it to you in simple terms, it is not the type of ship that fights in the front. It's designed to work out of the rear, so it wasn't made specifically for combat, didn't you know?]

- Eh? Wh-what?

Lelia sought help from Ideal and made a change of players.

[Luxon, please don't intimidate Miss Lelia too much. Also, I have a lot of experience in actual battles, even though I look like this. If we really fight, it's hard to know who will win. Am I wrong?]

[... I guess so.]

Luxon did not say that he could definitely win.

Do you have uncertainties?

"That's surprising. Didn't you say you're going to win?"

[We were created to fight new humans, not humanity in a war between humans. In other words, we have no data on ships fighting each other.]

You will never know unless you try.

Ah ~ so that's it. No wonder he's so insecure. I'll make fun of him later.

Anyway, it was nice to hear all that about Ideal.

"Have you fought the new humans?"

[Yes. That battle was really bad. He had returned to the base for maintenance, and was waiting for the new masters to arrive. However, they allowed an enemy armor to enter the base and we were forced to be in a semi-destroyed state. Fortunately I was the only one who survived, but unable to move due to the waiting orders.]

Lelia had never heard of it before.

"Hey, really?" Oh, could it be that the armor you saw that time was magic or something? [Yes.]

Here Luxon showed quite an overreaction than usual.

[qawsedrftgyfujikolp; !!!!]

Surprised by his reaction, Lelia had fled to the wall.

"W-What was that!?"

-I'm sorry. This guy hates magic armor a lot.

Ideal nodded.

[I get it. I hate them too.]

Compared to him, this one is much quieter.

Luxon's red eye glowed mysteriously.

[Where is? Where is the magic armor? If you don't destroy it, if you don't destroy it without leaving a single trace of dust, the entire legacy of the new humans will be the target of destruction.]

-You are always like that.

A happy Ideal was calming the flustered Luxon.

[Please calm down, Luxon. I have destroyed the magic armor on my own. There are no more.]

[... I see.]

Once Luxon calmed down, I told Lelia, who was glued to the wall, my thoughts on Noelle's future.

"Lelia, I think it would be best to let Noelle decide on her own."

-What's the matter with you? I need my sister and the baby tree!

"If something happens, then we'll figure it out. Also, I don't think the Sacred Tree is going to lose control right now."

"Yes, but ..."

I don't think the current Alberg-sama is the last boss.

And if it is ... is it when we lose Louise?

Losing your daughter... may drive you to despair.

In other words, saving Louise will keep the world from falling apart.

Oh, I'm going to save the world again, right? How painful, I'm going to save the world again! --- And until here we leave the jokes.

"Noelle is stronger than you think." So---

When I said that, Lelia lowered her head and left the room.

[Ah, Lelia-sama! Excuse us all, we withdraw. Lelia-sama ~!]

Lelia and Ideal left, leaving Luxon, Marie and me.

Marie was not happy.

"She's getting carried away now that she has Ideal. Onii-chan, you should threaten her more like you always do."

-No. And what do you mean by "always"?

Marie brought her gaze to the ground.

"That Lelia, she thinks Noelle is an object or something. Leaving it to Lelia will only make Noelle unhappy."

Despite the fact that they are twin sisters, Lelia is reincarnated.

Perhaps the feeling of being sisters is thin.

-What should we do? Luxon, what do you think?

[When you have a problem, you entrust it to someone else. In fact, the Master does not think for himself to solve problems.]

-I'm dumb.

[He's only clumsy when it suits him. Didn't he say he was usually very handy in life?] "People are very convenient, aren't they? So what do you think?"

[With great power, even if you are not a Master, comes arrogance.

However, he is human and I like him. It's nice to feel the pain once, but with Ideal by your side, that should be difficult. ---Alone...]

-Alone?

[It's nothing.]

"Say it to the end, I'm curious."

[As the Master will be confused, I will tell him when I have a firm backing. But more importantly, are there no preparations to rescue Louise?]

Oh, that's true.

-Yes it's correct. I'll prepare for that. Oh, Marie, go find the five idiots.

"Okay, but what do you want them to do now?"

-... Something funny.

When I said that with my best smile, Marie made a face that she didn't understand. ◇

Lelia ran out of Marie's mansion and was lying face down in the back seat of the car Ideal had prepared for her.

The automatic car was heading home.

Ideal, who was in the driver's seat, was comforting Lelia.

[Lelia-sama, don't worry too much about that. They don't understand how much you think of Noelle-sama.]

Hearing Ideal's words, Lelia agreed with it.

-Yes. Nobody understands it. No one knows ... how much I've been thinking about my sister.

Lelia remembered her previous life.

◇

Lelia also had an older sister in her previous life.

An older sister who was better than her, was not a proud older sister, but one that she was always compared to.

"Why can't you do as well as your sister?"

"You're very bad at this. Your sister could have done this when she was your age." Her parents always compared her to her sister.

The same was at school.

When she confessed her feelings to a boy she liked, he rejected her and then said "Oh, can you introduce me to your sister sometime?"

In her previous life, Lelia had an older sister who was an obstacle for her. When Lelia grew up, she had a fiancé.

He was a young man whose family owned a company, and he was the next president of it. He was not a serious man, but he was still an attractive and funny person.

And for Lelia in her previous life, she was proud of him.

I can beat my sister. I can beat my sister!

At the time it was clear that her fiancé was better than the boyfriend her sister was dating.

And so it was that she took her fiancé to her parents' house, as if to shake off the resentment she had been feeling.

At first her family was happy saying: "If you are fine with this daughter."

But within months, her own fiancé was dating her sister.

In her previous life, Lelia did not understand what had happened.

When she asked her fiancé why he did that, he didn't seem offended by answering her. -I'm sorry. But I get along better with your sister.

And her sister's response was even worse.

-I'm sorry. But ... I'm sure you'll find someone much better. So, you will congratulate us, right?

Lelia still remembered her sister laughing at her as she apologized.

She hated her sister.

She protested to her family, but her parents disagreed ...

"He wasn't suitable for you."

"You deserve more than that." "You need to find someone else."

They didn't care.

From there, in her previous life, Lelia cut ties with her family.

Due to this experience, Lelia couldn't help but hate her sister.

◇

In the back seat he remembered his sister from his previous life, which later overlapped with her sister in this life ... Noelle.

Lelia didn't like the idea of being the older sister.

She will be treated like an extra from her sister, no matter how far she goes.

"... I even took him." I chose a boring and simple boy who I had to put up with, so why couldn't he function the way I wanted?

Lelia was mad at Noelle for not getting her way.

Although she had chosen Emile out of her own patience, Noelle didn't even look at the other boys to attack.

Of all the boys, she chose Leon, a reincarnate just like Lelia.

"She and my older sister are the same." She is taking everything from me. She was also chosen as the priestess. I was born in the same Lespinasse house, but they didn't even give me the requirements.

Lelia was envious of Noelle, the heroine of this world.

She was reincarnated as her twin sister and had the expectation that maybe she could be a priestess.

However, that expectation was soon shattered.

Her parents from this world spoke to her.

They told her that she did not have the qualities of a priestess.

It was then that Lelia realized it.

No matter how far I go, I'm just an extra to my sister. I thought I would live modestly this time. Why do you get in my way?

She was mad at Noelle for not getting her way and she was also mad at Leon and his friends for helping Noelle with that.

They are also reincarnated, but they chose to help Noelle rather than themselves.

"In the end, everyone chooses my sister." Anyway, I'm just an extra to my sister. But even I am stubborn.

Ideal's red lens gleamed suspiciously as he glanced in the rearview

mirror at Lelia, who was lying down in the back seat.

Chapter 7 - The One Who Works Behind the Scenes

"We're going to rescue Louise. And you are also going to help us."

I proudly declared in front of the five idiots gathered in the dining room.

Julian, who was wearing an apron, put his hand to his forehead as he listened to me. "Balfault, things are different than they were with Noelle.

What do you have in mind? If it's just about saving ..."

-... Don't tell me that apart from that you don't have a plan.

Julian, who was surprised to see me, looked puzzled.

Jilk, whose attitude had grown cheeky, was the one who explained on Julian's behalf.

It seems he's making fun of me.

"Count Balfault, with all due respect; You're not thinking that if you save her, that's the end, are you? His Highness is concerned about what will happen after Louise is rescued. It's not just about saving her. The last time you made a fuss you created a big international problem, and now you are ignoring this mess?"

Not long ago I rescued Noelle from almost being forced to marry Loic.

At that time I was too scared of international affairs to move as much as I wanted.

But then it hit me.

The five idiots used to be too stupid to be useful, but in the end they are well-educated nobles.

When it comes to the affairs of the country, they are useful in their own way.

"It will be very difficult to deal with, which is why I am trusting you.

Now come up with a plan that humbles the pride of the Republic like last time."

I think I'm being reckless if I say so myself.

But unlike me, a reincarnated person, these guys grew up locally. There is a possibility that I can come up with a method that I cannot think of.

Brad was hugging a dove and a rabbit, and talking to Chris.

"It was Baltfault's selfish act in crushing the pride of Republic knights and soldiers, wasn't it? Didn't we propose a more conciliatory plan?"

-I agree. To be honest, I felt sorry for Loic when he was dealing with Baltfault. If you are talking about dealing a crushing blow to an opponent, Baltfault is a genius.

I put my hands on the table, ignoring Chris's comments as he acted serious wearing a loincloth.

"Look, I'm asking for ideas, so give me a little wisdom."

Greg looked unhappy, but reluctantly agreed to help.

"No, I'll help you if you ask me to help you. In fact, I am in your debt.

But if you don't know what you're going to do, there's no way I can help ... I mean, what is Louise to you in the first place?"

Is she worth saving?

Greg asked a very obvious question, but his muscles were swollen, like he was training.

Also, he was wearing a tank top and shorts.

Apparently he was cold just being in that pair of pants.

Yes, if you wear clothes, no problem.

"Hmmm ... she's like a sister to me?"

The five idiots were stunned when they heard what I said.

Julian and others shook their heads.

"Is this what they call a Siscon?"

"I don't want to be seen like that."

Since the five idiots can't think of anything, Anjie and Livia entered the dining room. Apparently, they had heard us talk.

Anjie looked at me with an " oh my ".

"You should have been more selective with your words."

Livia was a little angry. Her expression was serious with a classic deadpan.

"Please be serious, Leon!" You're going to help Louise, right? Guys, keep the jokes to a minimum."

Oh, I think everyone has misunderstood something.

-Do not worry. There is no problem in saving her. The problem is what happens after we rescue her.

At my confidence, Anjie crossed her arms.

"If you say so, I suppose it is possible to save her. But then it's really a question of what comes next. If you do something wrong, all negotiations will go sour."

The conversation between the Kingdom and the Republic about reparations has been organized. If I do a bad job here, the conversation will be ruined.

And I'm sure the Kingdom will be angry about it.

For a moment I thought it would be good for Roland to suffer, but it would also be a problem for others, so I won't.

"The Rault family can certainly be taken in by us. Can't we do something about it?"

When I asked Anjie for help, Julian joined the conversation.

"The Republic gets nervous when it comes to the Sacred Tree. In fact, they have shown us that when we've been here. It is all very well for us to help, but I am sure the Republic will not sit idly by on this matter. Even if the Rault family is on your side, it's too difficult."

It is a big problem for the kingdom that five of the six main noble families turn into enemies.

Anjie also had a complex look on her face.

"Noelle has some benefits, but Louise doesn't. I can understand why you want to help them, but if you get involved, there could be a war."

We would steal the sacrifice that the Sacred Tree asked for.

The Republic would protest, and perhaps even start a war against the Kingdom. And the Kingdom will blame me for my troublesome behavior.

I want to help, but I can't.

It is a very frustrating situation.

This is why having a position is so troublesome.

Livia also looked worried.

"And it's also a problem that Louise herself doesn't want to be rescued.

Leon, are you still going to save her? The Sacred Tree has her brother's soul inside it, right?"

... Louise will surely resent me for that.

But what does it matter?

"You can't let a dead man drag you down. I'm sorry for her brother Leon, but he'll have to wait a little longer. Also, I have my doubts about the story.

Unfortunately, I'm so twisted that I honestly can't believe people's stories.

I wish I could regain my pure heart like when I was a child.

The way Anjie looked at me was sad.

"Even if you save her, you will be hated."

"There are so many people who already hate me, I'm willing to let some more hate me." And I'm used to being hated. Hey guys!

I smiled at the five idiots who held a grudge against me and looked very uncomfortable.

Julian tugged on his cheeks.

-It is true.

Jilk and the others laughed, but their eyes didn't.

—I envy your personality which doesn't care about people's resentment.

Brad's eyebrows arched.

"I'll never forget the time you beat me."

Chris looked at me and was dumbfounded.

"That is what you are, Baltfault. That's what makes you devilish.

Greg seemed to have a vein protruding from his forehead.

"You have a really nice personality, don't you? --- In the end, we have not

solved the problem after the rescue, so what are we going to do?"

I let out a sigh.

-It is true. I thought you guys would be more useful, but seriously, you are useless.

The gaze of the five idiots tightened even more for my honesty.

Julian pointed at me.

"Are you one to talk!? Even you can't come up with a good idea!

—I'm the one who sets the goals and executes them. You are the ones who make the plan and help. So it's not my fault.

While they were yelling and making noise, Cordelia approached.

" Leon-sama, you have a guest."

-A guest?

◇

The great airship of the Republic.

It was a six hundred meter long old luxury cruiser, but it has been put together for this time. The ship, heading for the tops of the Sacred Tree, had many guards attached to it.

There was no record of the Sacred Tree calling for a sacrifice, so this was a first for the Republic.

Therefore, it was not known what would happen.

To deal with anything, it was decided to send the representatives of the six great nobles.

On board the great aircraft were the young men who are supposed to be the next generation.

And those who boarded the great airship were ...

Serge from the Rault family, who volunteered.

"It's quite showy. A normal warship would have been better."

From the Druille family, Hugh, who volunteered to replace his brother Fernand.

- Are you stupid? We are not going to fight there.

From the Pleven family, Emile, who volunteered.

"Stop. This is not the time to fight."

And Narcisse from the Granze family, a former teacher at the Academy.

-So is. This is a historic moment for me. If we're going to sacrifice Louise, I'll have to record it all for posterity.

Narcisse, who had an academic temperament, seemed internally opposed to sacrificing his former student, Louise.

However, he could not go against the decisions of the heads of the six great nobles. On the contrary, Hugh, who was her ex-fiancé, had a relieved expression on his face.

"Still, I can't believe the Faiviel family refused to do so. My brother will follow the escort with the fleet."

The young people of the six families were taken on board and forced to see what happened this time with their eyes.

At the same time, there were also the faces that would be sacrificed in the event of an unforeseen event.

In the midst of all this, there were no volunteers from the Faiviel family, and knights and soldiers had been sent in their place.

Serge turned his attention to the man sitting in the corner of the luxurious room.

"Loic, are you the representative of the House of Barriere despite not having your family crest?" The Barriere house has fallen very low.

He provoked it, but Loic's response was slow.

-... Maybe you are right.

Abandoned and having lost his family crest, Loic had no value as a noble.

The reason Loic was here is because he was chosen to be Louise's sacrificial watchdog.

It is a role where he will see what happens closer to him, and, if nothing goes well, he will get involved.

Hugh gave Loic a stern look as he sat back in his chair and didn't try to get involved.

Last time, during his wedding to Noelle, Hugh had also sided with Loic.

Because of that, the position of the Druille family worsened.

"Thanks to you, my brother and I are having a hard time." As long as I can risk your life to make amends, you should be grateful.

Emile tried to deal with the cold stares directed around Loic.

"Don't do that again." Besides, Hugh, you have to take responsibility for your actions. It's wrong to blame only Loic.

"Ah!" Emile, I didn't expect you to lecture me.

The five were not the best of friends.

Narcisse let out a sigh.

"Do you realize that Louise is the one with the most difficulties?" So refrain from doing anything that might interfere with your last moments.

Narcisse reprimanded them and Hugh sat down on the sofa with a huff.

Serge was looking out the window.

"Guys, get ready." The Demon Knight of the Realm is coming.

The other four reacted to Serge, who said those things with a smile on his face. Hugh was looking forward to that too.

"Has he really come?" Will you take on a country for Louise?

Hugh trembled as he watched Leon's strength closely.

It won't come from his mouth, but actually he was afraid there was a chance it would come.

Seeing this, Serge scoffed at Hugh.

-Are you afraid? Of a type like that?

"From a guy like that?" Don't you know how strong that guy is? If you are going to speak all conceited, you will have to knock it down first!

"Oh, I'll shoot it down."

Seeing Serge's confident appearance, Loic opened his mouth.

"... Serge, do you really think you can beat that guy?"

"Shut up, you creepy necklace bastard." Don't think that because you couldn't beat him I won't be able to either. You haven't trained like I have.

Narcisse rubbed his stomach with his hand, as if it hurt.

"Leon is getting closer. I don't want to fight if possible. He took down an armed unit with his bare hands."

Serge knew that story too, but he still showed confidence.

"He has a trick up his sleeve. Pierre was stupid and that's why he lost."

Emile, who gave Serge a cold look, unlike usual, stopped him.

"Could you stop there?" We are not here to hear you brag about it.

"...!!"

Serge got up and left the room with his spear.

◇

Louise was saying goodbye to her family before boarding the aircraft.

-I'm leaving.

Her mother was sobbing and was being supported by those around her.

Alberg gave Louise one last look.

"Are you sure you want to go? You can still ..."

-No. Leon is waiting.

Louise was very tired.

This was because every night he had nightmares about how her brother Leon was suffering. "Louise, you're a bad girl. It is unforgivable that you die before your parents."

-I'm sorry. But I want to see Leon. I couldn't do anything then, but I want to be there by his side. Also, when the Sacred Tree takes care of me, Leon and I will take care of you.

Alberg was about to say something and swallowed his words.

Knights and soldiers from the other houses were guarding the perimeter and he couldn't say anything without it being overheard.

Fernand had been chosen to command Louise's fleet of guards.

"Acting Chief, your daughter is responsible for herself ..."

Before he could say anything else, Alberg looked at him coldly.

-Responsible? Be responsible for killing herself?

"Acting Chief! We talked about it and decided on it! If the Sacred Tree asked, it would be an honor! Your daughter is ready for this. It doesn't make sense for the Acting Chief to stop this."

Alberg looked down.

Honor? Do you think it is an honor to sacrifice your daughter?

Wherever we live, we live tied to the Sacred Tree.

The Sacred Tree will give you everything you ask for.

Thus thought the Republic.

Louise was hugging her mother.

"Mother, I'm going now."

"Louise, why do I have to lose you, not just Leon, but you too?"

Louise arrived at Alberg after comforting her mother.

-Father.

"... I am proud of you, my daughter."

-Thank you.

Then Louise turned her gaze, searching for someone.

Alberg realized immediately who it was.

-He is not here. Instead, I have a message for you. "I'm sorry".

-I'm sorry?

Because he feels it? Louise had a worried expression on her face, so Alberg elaborated.

"He couldn't save you, so he doesn't have the face to see you."

"... I wish I had seen him one last time."

- Is there something you want to tell him?

-Well, just tell him that I said, "I had a lot of fun." Meeting him was a good way to remember Leon.

There was a striking resemblance, even from Alberg's point of view.

It's hard to believe they were such strangers.

Was this how her son would have been when he grew up? So it seemed.

-We'll find out.

Fernand told Louise that it was almost time to leave.

-We are going?

Louise boarded the aircraft.

Alberg hugged his crying wife and muttered to himself when he saw Louise walk away.

"I'm sorry, Louise. Please forgive me."

It was not a regret from a father who had to sacrifice his daughter, or anything else.

Chapter 8 - Sky Pirates Flag

When Louise boarded the large airship, it was Serge who greeted her.

With a frown, he looked at Louise's figure.

"It's a very lively costume for a sacrifice."

Louise's costume was a pure white dress as an offering to the Sacred Tree.

Depending on how you look at it, this looked more like a wedding dress.

-... Why are you here?

What surprised Louise was not that Serge greeted her, but that Serge was aboard the large aircraft.

It was strange that Serge, the heir, was here, as he could be involved if something went wrong.

Serge, spear in hand, was dressed as if he were about to go into battle.

"I'm just trying to make sure you don't escape."

"You're a real jerk. Do you think I'd come in here and then run away?"

"You won't since you're going to see your favorite brother, right?"

Louise raised her right hand in response to Serge's ridiculous attitude, but Fernand grabbed her arm to stop her.

"You two stop. Serge, you are being very rude."

With Fernand's intervention, Louise ignored Serge and walked away.

The guards followed her, and Fernand was relieved to see them.

"I'll be watching from the rear. If something happens, I'll come running."

As Fernand walked away, Serge spoke meaningfully to him.

"Prepare to fight. Fernand, the Kingdom is coming."

Fernand looked back as he stopped.

"You seem to think he's coming too."

"Yes, he will come."

With all of that said, Serge also moved.

And then he muttered to himself.

"Come on, I'm ready for you. I know your weakness."

◇

When the large aircraft departed, a military air battleship later departed to escort it. In the rear, the fleet led by Fernand could be seen.

The airships ascended towards the top of the Sacred Tree, the treetops.

Near the room where Louise was, Serge and the representatives of the six families were waiting for her.

Serge was sitting in his chair, checking his weapons.

Those were the weapons Ideal had prepared.

Hugh was watching with interest.

"It is a very unusual weapon. Where did you find it?"

Everyone here knew that Serge was an adventurer.

So he thought that Serge had found a lost object.

Narcisse came over, too, and looked at the weapons on the table.

Serge gave him permission to hold the spear.

"Is it so light!? Is it the same size and weight?"

"Light but robust."

The tip of the spear was shaped to cut, and the shape of the pistol Serge was holding was unusual.

Those were the weapons that Ideal had prepared.

"I've also prepared some for you. Use them as you wish."

Hugh took one of the weapons, but his fear of Leon and the others had not disappeared.

"Are you sure you can defeat him with these weapons? Shit! Why is that guy coming? Normally he shouldn't come!"

As a noble, Hugh didn't really understand it, as there was no reason for Leon to force himself to rescue Louise.

Narcisse didn't grab the gun.

"I went into a dungeon with them once and they were amazing kids. It was scary not knowing what they were going to do. They really were wild."

Narcisse had explored with Leon before, and remembering that moment made him think of all that.

"I think they are excellent. I think they are good as adventurers and as gentlemen." When Hugh heard that and was scared, but he was strong.

"But we are powerless before the blessing of the Holy Tree. The only person we have to be careful of is Count Baltfault. Don't you agree, Loic?

Because you understand it better than anyone."

Hugh kept his pistol in its holster as he expressed his disgust towards Loic, who was defeated by Leon.

With the sword he had taken from his parents' home, Loic did not take

the weapon Serge had prepared for him.

-Yes.

Emile warned the four, who believed they should just be careful with Leon, to get ready.

"Count Baltfault has the guardian crest." It's not a good idea for us to get distracted. We have to take care of each other.

Narcisse agreed, and like the greatest of all, organized the place.

-Yes. But he is unlikely to attack us. After all, they won't benefit at all by rescuing Louise.

All eyes around gathered to look at Serge.

Serge, who leaned his body on the back of a chair, assured that he would definitely come.

-He will come. I'll take care of him when he gets here.

Those statements made Hugh even more uncomfortable.

"Although I wish he didn't come. Damn, why does he have to get involved in something so unnecessary? Louise is none of his business."

Serge was relieved to see that Hugh knew how terrifying Leon was.

-Do not be afraid. The only things that make him strong are his aircraft and his armed unit. Fist to fist, he's a normal guy. I'm stronger than anyone here. Isn't that right, Loic?

Loic lost to Leon, but Serge was confident that he could beat him.

That's partly because Serge exercises regularly, but also because he's so proud of himself.

He didn't want to be compared to Leon, who died a long time ago, so he did the best he could.

But no one recognized him, he became stubborn and remained an adventurer.

He trained even if he vomited blood, and he continued to challenge the dungeon even when he was about to die.

As much as he went to the adventurer's house, he had no intention of losing.

Louise's room has no windows. If you can't identify where it is, you'll have to go in and find it in person, right? --- Come on, come and show yourself.

The ship's defenses, which were set up by Ideal, prevented Luxon from interfering with Louise's location.

So the only way for Leon and his team to help Louise was by boarding the large airship.

If that happened, he would not be able to use his armed unit.

They would fight hand to hand.

The same entity with the same name and shape ... the right person appeared here to kill you.

Hugh looked at Serge, who was smiling grimly, with a scared look.

Emile complained about Serge because of that.

"You seem to think you can win if you fight him face to face, but you underestimate him."

-What did you say?

"Pierre and Loic, they all had a hard time with him. Serge, how can you say that you are the only one who will not have the same thing?"

—You are a small fish that cannot do anything, do not play the with those...!!

Serge pushed him off of his feet and Emile fell to the ground.

Narcisse stopped him and blamed Serge for his actions.

"Serge, stop!"

"It's irritating to look at that thing. I can't stand guys like him. Lelia is not going to be happy with someone like you. ...I'd better get out of here."

When Lelia's name was mentioned, Emile gritted his teeth and looked down. As Serge tried to clear himself, a siren sounded.

- "Enemy attack! The enemy is attacking us! Above the sky, a pirate aircraft is approaching! Everyone on deck. "

The aircraft shuddered as soon as it heard a burst of voices from the bridge. Narcisse and Hugh fell, Serge ducked.

Loic looked out the window.

-What happened? And, air pirates? How is it possible that in a place so close to the Sacred Tree there are aerial pirates ...?

The area around the Sacred Tree is usually guarded by the military and no pirate from the sky could approach it.

It was strange that there is one in this place.

And what was heard was ...

- "Dear friends of the Republic ~ ... I'm here to play."

... a voice that was cheerful at first, but low at the end.

It was Leon's voice.

Hugh looked terrified.

"Noooooooo! He already caaaaaame!!!!"

Hugh wasn't the only one who was upset when he heard Leon's voice.

Even the knights and soldiers aboard the aircraft were confused with

fear. Leon's voice was heard even more.

- "You are probably wondering why we are here. I'm sure you say that it's none of our business. So I'll tell you why. Actually, Serge beat me up a while ago. It was supposed to be about the story of Louise's sacrifice ... but recently I was thinking about it and it made me angry, so I came to beat the crap out of him. "

Narcisse broke out in a cold sweat as Leon said something outrageous.

-Are you crazy. Is that why you are here !?

As if he had heard Narcisse's voice, Leon continued speaking.

- "Is that why you're here... You might think that. If someone else told me that, I would surely make fun of them too. But, you know ... I can't sleep with my pillow up if I don't pop him a few good ones to feel better! So ... let's play. "

The broadcast was cut short.

◊

The story goes back a few days.

The person who visited me with the idea of rescuing Louise was the one who was sent to organize negotiations with the Republic.

I ran into a man at the door of Marie's mansion and my voice shook with excitement. "Mentooooorrrrr!"

"It's been a long time, Leon-sama. I hear you have been very active."

- W-What is he doing here? Ah, forget it, come in! Come in!!



I took my mentor to a room, made the special tea leaves and prepared it carefully.

My Mentor is currently the headmaster of a school in the Kingdom of Holfault.

He is not the type of person who is in the Republic because he is on vacation. But this time he has been sent to the Republic as a negotiator.

"But, Mentor. Why are you here?"

"I just wanted to see your face before I go, Mr. Leon."

He goes by taking the trouble to stop here for my sake, although I really should be the one to go say hi.

My Mentor looked at us across the room and smiled at us.

"I'm so relieved to see you all looking so good."

I shrugged, looking at the five idiots.

"But they have a lot of energy. I just want them to calm down a little."

When I said that, everyone glared at me.

Putting that topic aside, I talked about my Mentor's work.

"Mentor, I heard you've made a good deal with the Republic. It was spectacular!"

"I've managed to find a way to make it work according to your wishes."

Letting out a sigh, Anjie asked my Mentor.

"It is not natural for a school principal to be a negotiator."

"I guess there aren't many of us available. Originally, someone else would have been sent for this."

My Mentor finished a great job. But I felt sorry for him.

"Mentor, I'm afraid I'm going to have to annoy you a bit about that ...
no, I'm sure I will have to.

"Is there a problem?"

I decided to tell my Mentor what was happening.

-The thing is...

When I mentioned that I wanted to rescue Louise, my Mentor looked at me with a serious expression. "Mr. Leon, do you understand what you're trying to do?"

If I save Louise, I'm sure we're in big trouble.

She herself would not want to be saved and I am sure she would resent me.

If I want to give any more reasons, it is to prevent Alberg-sama from despairing and becoming the final boss after losing Louise.

And this is the most important.

... Because I want to save Louise.

-I get it. I'm sure this will be a problem for you, though.

"I don't think it makes sense to tell you what to do, Leon-sama. If you say you're going to do it, you will."

My Mentor nodded, and Julian, who had been listening to the conversation, interrupted our conversation.

Hey? Why are you interrupting a conversation between the Mentor and me?

"Director, are you sure? If Baltfault takes action, all the negotiations that have been done so far will be spoiled. Or worse, a war could occur."

My Mentor was strong and imposing.

-No problem. It was Leon-sama's decision in the first place. I can't stop it. I don't have the strength to do it.

-Mentor.

It hurts to upset my Mentor. --- Roland? I don't care how much trouble I want to give that guy, I want to give him as much trouble as I can.

"But to save the young woman who was chosen to be sacrificed? That's the scene I long for as a gentleman."

Anjie crossed her arms and was appalled by what my Mentor said.

"It's like something out of a fairy tale, but reality is always cruel. The problem is after you save her. Director, still won't you stop Leon?"

"I was originally sent here to deal with what happened in the Republic.

... Also, it is the duty of a teacher to help his students if they are in trouble."

T-That was great.

My Mentor is great!

When I was shocked, my Mentor pushed me back.

"Can you do it with as little damage as possible, Leon-san?"

-I will do everything I can.

-All right. Then I'll take care of the rest of the negotiations.

-Thanks a lot!

While I thought that all the problems were over, Noelle, who had been listening to me, raised her hand.

Noelle spoke as everyone in the room looked at her.

"I-I'm going with you too."

"Noelle? Not you---"

"I want to complain to Louise!"

While everyone was surprised by what he was saying, my Mentor was stroking his chin. "Hmm, sounds like you have some kind of history with her."

"It's not that much. Louise has put me through a lot of trouble. But I owe her a debt of gratitude. So I'm going to save her and complain about it."

If you want to save Louise, be honest and say so.

"Noelle, you are not very honest."

I spilled those words, and Luxon looked at me in surprise.

[That's not something you should say, Master]

-Hey? ...huh?

Everyone in the room was looking at me as if to say: "You are the most dishonest."

Although I don't think anyone is as honest as me...

◇

... That is why we sold the Republic a carefree fight.

This time, Einhorn waved the flag of the Sky Pirates.

In other words, we are now pirates of the sky.

Einhorn charged directly at the large airship.

I was giving instructions as I got on the Arroganz.

"Guys, make it exciting!"

Flying around Einhorn were the armed units Luxon had hastily put together.

Julian and the other idiots were the ones inside them.

Each was a distinctive unit.

The one who put on the white knight armor was Julian.

- "I never imagined that you would kidnap a princess as a Sky Pirate."

The green-colored armor carried a large rifle.

It was Jilk who was aboard it.

- "Count Baltfault looks too good in the role of a sky pirate."

He's a real jerk.

The purple pointy hat armor was the armor Brad was riding on.

He was surprised by the performance of that armed unit.

- "Is this armed unit really that quick to make? It is more powerful than the armed unit it was in. You couldn't win with an ordinary unit against this one. If Arroganz has this kind of performance, they shouldn't be able to win."

In the cockpit, Luxon was explaining the situation in a way that was like saying "oh dear."

[Arroganz is an armed unit that I specially prepared for Master. The performance is different from that of a hastily built armed unit... But please be careful with them, even if they are random machines. I won't forgive you if you break them.]

All armed units are larger than average.

Although they are smaller than Arroganz.

Greg climbed into the red armor and prepared to board the large

battleship as it approached.

- "Hey guys, I think it's time."

A blue airship with a great sword pierced through an armed Republic unit that came ahead.

-"We will enter."

The last two sounded relatively decent, but, in fact, they were almost naked in the cockpit.

One was only wearing a speedo and the other a loincloth.

I want you to understand how I feel when I see men showing their upper body naked in the cabin.

[Master, we can't locate Louise. We are being interfered with by Ideal's Defense Network.]

"Let's go in and get her out. I want you to come with me."

[I'll take care of it. I will be in touch.]

"Everyone, let's go!"

We climbed into the armed units and rammed the large aircraft.

The side of Einhorn's body hit the large airship enough to prevent it from sinking.

The two aircraft collided, and the unpleasant sound of metal scraping against metal could be heard.

The collision caused sparks to erupt.

Then the great airship stopped moving.

"They're not going anywhere!"

I jumped out of Arroganz's cockpit with the machine gun in hand.

I landed on the deck of the aircraft and looked for the entrance.

-There it is.

Originally this was a luxury cruise. The deck is large, but there is a lot of room because it was not built to fight.

Pointing to the entrance to enter, the armed soldiers came from there.

"Y-They're coming!"

"Shoot to kill!"

As the two soldiers fired at me, I fired a non-lethal rubber bullet, a bullet that would be absurdly painful if it hit its target.

The two fallen men were fighting, but we ignored them and moved on.

[Master, I'm done here.]

-Go ahead.

I saw Luxon fly away as I got into the ship.

◇

Einhorn struck the large airship with his body.

Fernand was watching from afar.

He was surprised to see the scene from the bridge of the battleship.

"N-It can't be!" How can it be here! Why are you coming here?"

As a noble, Fernand couldn't understand it.

His subordinates were asking for instructions, but his expression was clearly altered.

They were all afraid to learn that they were dealing with Leon, who had terrorized the Republic so many times.

"Master Fernand! What should we do!?"

"W-What to do? We have to protect her!"

To protect the sacrifice, Louise, he ordered an attack on Einhorn.

But his men were too scared to move.

"B-But ... The enemy is the Devil Knight! W-We can't compete with them. Also, he has the Guardian Crest!"

Morale was visibly low, and even Fernand couldn't help it.

Then a communication came from Leon.

- "Eeeh? I wonder if the Republicans are going to attack us! I am waving the flag of the air pirates and I am going to go ahead with it..."

Could it be that they are scared !? "

Fernand yelled at his men.

"Cut the communication."

"T-They're hacking the comms!! There is nothing we can do about it!"

"Are you mocking us?!!!"

Leon laughed as Fernand's handsome face twisted.

-"What? I thought it would be more difficult, but it's actually quite easy.

Well, it's a country that would sacrifice just one girl for it, and I honestly didn't expect much. "

Occasional shots were heard.

Leon was apparently making his way aboard the ship.

"Do you understand what's going on !? If you do this, you won't be able to

...

"Master Fernand, he can't hear you."

-Shit!

He can't hear voices from here, only the other party's voice was transmitted.

It was difficult for him to give orders to the other aircraft, he even had trouble getting the communications to work.

Unlike before, Leon began to be serious.

-"---I will tell them. I don't like them and I came to crush them. If you don't like it, try to beat me. If they can, of course. "

Fernand shook his fist on the desk and faced Leon with his anger.

"Do you think we like to offer sacrifices?" The reason for this is because you have put us against the wall.

In a normal republic, Louise's sacrifice would have been more carefully discussed.

However, after being shown the foreign threat that Leon is, the Republic would be destroyed if it is abandoned even by the Sacred Tree.

That is why it was offered as a sacrifice without discussion.

Leon's presence had a lot to do with Louise's sacrifice.

◇

It happened while Leon and the others started fighting.

On land, Lelia was shocked to receive a report from Ideal.

She was in the middle of lunch, but the spoon she was holding dropped.

"Oh, did they really go in to save Louise?"

[Yes. One of them is your sister, Lelia-sama.]

"Did he take my sister too? What the hell does he think he's doing !?"

That's not good. I don't care about Louise, but if something happens to my sister ... no, wait ... That's it. There will no longer be a need to depend on the Sacred Tree now.

Lelia's eyes were on Ideal.

With Ideal, my safety is assured. He could even rebuild a Republic with him if he wanted to. No, we could even build a new one.

Aside from Luxon, she didn't believe there was a force that could defeat Ideal.

She could form an alliance with Leon and his friends and maintain non-interference between them.

Lelia changed her mind and went back to eating with her new spoon, regaining her composure. [Oh? You seem to have suddenly calmed down.]

"I just realized, I don't need to worry anymore about the Sacred Tree."

[... What do you mean by that?]

"With you, Ideal, there is no need for the Sacred Tree. Right?"

Ideal nodded and the conversation ended.

Or so Lelia thought, but Ideal's reaction was strange.

[That is not acceptable. The Sacred Tree is a defense item. It is indispensable for the future of the Republic.]

"Yes, but ...

[First of all, the Republic only exists because of the Sacred Tree. If we lose it, we'll be in big trouble.]

"I-If I have you ...

[I won't deny it, but losing the Sacred Tree is a great loss. I hope he doesn't take it so easily.]

Lelia couldn't contradict him when it was said in a stronger tone than usual. "I-Okay."

[Thanks for your understanding.]

As Lelia ate again, she thought about the future.

In the end, things will continue to progress around my sister in the future. Well, she is the protagonist of this world, so it can't be helped. By the way, will Serge be okay? ... His odds are too low...

"Ideal ... if Serge was in danger, could you save him?"

[Of course yes. But are you sure?]

-What?

[I was curious as to why Young Emile's name was not mentioned.]

Lelia noticed that Serge had become a more important part of her life than Emile. "... You can save Emile too."

[It is understood.]

Then Lelia looked at the ceiling.

I will have to think ahead when everyone else returns. In the meantime, I think I'll cancel my engagement to Emile.

◇

On the other hand.

The three people who remained at Marie's mansion were the Headmaster, Cordelia... and Yumeria.

While the Headmaster was enjoying his tea, Cordelia spoke to him.

"Director, is this a good time?"

-What does it mean?

"I'm sure you noticed. If Master Leon takes action against the Republic, it will be a big problem. In the worst case, he will be executed."

Taking the freedom to fight another country and worsening relations with them will put Leon in a bad position.

But the Director was looking out the window.

"He's a curious young man."

-Director?

Cordelia was confused as to what the Headmaster said.

"What I'm trying to say is ...

"You're worried about him, aren't you? ... Leon-sama is very dear."

"N-It's not like that! He brought Anjelica-Sama to the battlefield too, you know! I am angry! If he is the person chosen by Anjelica-Sama, it is natural that I want him to act more carefully."

"I suppose it would be for the best. But it may not be the right thing to do."

"Better but not correct?"

"It's okay to save Louise as a person here, but it's wrong as a noble.

Leon has no right to interfere in the affairs of other countries."

Essentially, they can only observe.

"It is an act of chivalry. But I'm not saying that as a compliment.

Sometimes it seems to me that Leon-sama sees things that we do not see, that's what I think."

"Do you see things that we don't?"

"Leon-sama has a different perspective than we do. I'm not saying it's the right thing to do, but it has solved a problem that has been building up for a long time."

"The old Principality of Fanoss, isn't it? I also think he has achieved great things as a hero, but his normal behavior is too careless."

"No, no, that's not all. The kingdom has been saved by him many times.

So helping him is like an atonement. No, it is better to say that I am indebted to him."

As Cordelia closed her mouth, the Headmaster smiled at her.

"I've said a lot of things, but at the end of the day, maybe I just want to see what will happen to Leon-sama in the future."

Seeing the Headmaster laughing at that, Cordelia felt uncomfortable.

"You need to take it more seriously."

Chapter 9 - Conquest Target vs Conquest Target

It happened inside the big airship.

Louise was hugging herself in despair.

"Why can't you just leave me alone? All I want to do is be with my brother."

Leon got on board. She didn't expect him to do that.

The maids in Louise's care held their weapons while scared. Then the door opened and Serge appeared.

The maids seemed relieved to see him, but from Louise's point of view, a face appeared that she didn't want to see.

-What do you want? I don't even want to see your face, so go away.

"I didn't come because you were lonely. I'm here to protect you."

" *You're* going to protect me?"

Serge said he was going to protect her, and she thought there was something fishy about that. Then Serge gave an ugly smile.

"I'm going to smash a guy who looks like your brother in front of you. I thought it would be fun."

Louise was horrified to imagine the scene of Leon being defeated.

"You're such an idiot. That's why I hate you."

The expression disappeared from Serge's face.

-I see. Well, I do not care. Their goal is you. I'll wait for him here.

"What about everyone else?"

She wanted someone more human instead of him, but everyone else was out except Serge.

"They went to greet the guys who came in with their bare hands." Well, I'll let the weak take care of them.

Louise looked at Serge, who was relaxing in his chair, and was concerned for Leon's well-being.

Leon, I'm begging you, please don't take too much risk. I'm begging you, please don't do anything dangerous.

◇

"Ah, you are ...!"

"H-Hiiiiii!"

When I pushed back the attackers, I recognized the only soldier in the place. He was the man that boarded Einhorn when I first came to the Republic.

He had seen me as inferior and mocked me at the time.

I would hit a man like that with a rubber bullet, and then I would walk over to where he is rolling and trample him.

-I've missed you. I just wanted to thank you for that time !!

"N-Noooo! Someone help me!"

-What happened? Before you were a captain, and now you are a lieutenant? I wonder why they demoted you! ~Tell me ~

When I pointed the gun at him, he started foaming at the mouth and passed out.

"I was just beginning."

Well OK. I'm busy. I do not have time for this.

I was muttering to myself, but normally this is where Luxon would hang on to tell me, [So why did you threaten him? It's a waste of time].

Damn! Without that guy's sarcasm, I feel strangely lonely.

"Well, I have to find Louise, but I wonder if the others are okay."

Although they are the type of people who would not die.

Will the five idiots I walked in with be alright... right?

◇

- Gaaaaahhhhhhhhhhhh!!!!

Greg, with his machine gun at hand, began to fight bravely.

A series of bullets were fired over his shoulder.

The way he defeated the Republican knights and soldiers who attacked him was completely reliable.

However, Jilk had a very cold look in his eyes.

They met and worked together, but Greg was almost naked.

"Greg, aren't you ashamed of the way you're dressed?"

Jilk had a scoped sniper rifle, and several times, because of Greg stepping forward, he could see his butt.

He couldn't help but want to pull the trigger.

"I'm sorry, my friend. I am a little embarrassed."

"Then put some clothes on, please."

Jilk was almost relieved that Greg had some common sense left.

But it was too early for him to think that way.

"I don't have enough muscle in my back, it's embarrassing."

Jilk was speechless.

Does this guy don't mind being naked and is ashamed of having little muscle on his back? Is he really that stupid !?

Jilk looked up at the sky and then thought of the others who weren't there.

At least Chris is ... no. Chris and you are far from decent. I wish I could have worked with His Highness, "why did I have to go through this?"

Greg tried to advance now that the enemy was gone.

"Hey, Jilk." How long are you going to be looking up? Concentrate. We are in a war zone. I swear, this is why people without common sense are not good at this.

Jilk put his finger on the trigger of the gun.

Can I please shoot this guy in the back?

◇

By the time that happened, Chris had joined Brad.

Wielding a wooden sword and clad in loincloths, he struck out one enemy after another. An enemy soldier screamed.

"Ugh! Despite being dressed like a freak, he is strong!"

"I'm not a freak!"

Chris, whose loincloth was mocked, brandished his wooden sword and knocked out the enemy soldier.

At that moment, Brad was moving slowly from behind.

Behind them, a group of people with conspicuous armed units, rushed towards the group.

When the Republic soldiers saw this, they retreated, as if they thought they couldn't win.

"There are too many of them! Call for backup!"

"Are they the main army ?!"

-Dammit! Damn barbarians of the kingdom!

Brad sighed as he watched his enemies flee.

At that moment, the soldiers visible behind him disappeared.

"Those guys are impatient. We've only just started! Chris, thank you for your hard work."

Chris swung the wooden sword at Brad, who looked like it was all simple, and hit him on the head.

"Ouch!" What are you doing?!

"Don't make me fight alone, why don't you fight on your own?"

Brad shook his head, saying, "You don't get it ~!"

"The main character is supposed to be slow to appear."

-... Were you the main character? No matter how you think about it, the main character is Baltfault. He's the one who said he was going to come in, and the person he's going to help is someone he knows. Brad, I can only see you as a minor character."

Brad, who was treated as a supporting character by Chris, pulled on his cheeks.

"I-I'm the main character in my story. That is why I will always be the protagonist."

"Well that's all good. Hey, let's move on quickly. If the enemy returns with reinforcements, we will be in trouble."

"Oh wait a minute!"

Brad chased Chris as they went.

◇

"Ugh! I can't believe I'm the only one left to watch the ship."

The one who spoke was Julian, who was guarding Einhorn and complaining in the cockpit of his armed unit.

Everyone else had left the ship, but he was the only one left in the rear.

He was frustrated because he wanted to fight with everyone else.

- "Julian, be careful!"

From the Einhorn Bridge, Marie called Julian.

The others inside the ship were Anjelica, Olivia and Noelle.

Kyle and Cara were on board too, the same usual faces were there.

-... Fuh, if you think you have been given the important role to protect Marie, don't regret it.

Julian would have complained earlier, but now he was motivated.

"Has the enemy come here?"

Towards Einhorn came a unit armed with the emblem of House Barriere.

The other soldiers with an armed unit also tried to enter Einhorn.

"I won't let them pass!"

Julian fired a warning shot, stopping the soldiers and the enemy's armed units that pounced on them.

Julian's armed unit drew their sword into the air.

He attacked the legs of the approaching enemy armed units and cut them

easily. The enemy lost his balance and Julian stopped when he defeated him.

"What strength. That Baltfault guy, did he have that much power?"

Julian, who had already dueled with Leon, was terrified to learn that he had been fighting in such powerful armor.

At the same time, he had mixed feelings when he realized that Leon was holding back.

It's annoying, although being clumsy, he was very careful not to take our lives. It was funny to think that cheeky Leon was looking out for them.

"If I borrow this armed unit and cannot fulfill my duties, Baltfault will laugh at me." I really wouldn't like that.

Julian ignited his spirit as he imagined how Leon would tease him.

The shout of the soldiers was heard as he cut the arm of another armed unit that was coming towards him and put him out of action.

"Come attack me who wants to die!"

Then another machine ... an armed unit came out.

- "Well then I'll be your opponent."

It was Loic's voice.

He attacked Julian.

Seeing this, Julian dodged as fast as he could.

"Is this guy going to give up his life !?

There was nothing to fear from Loic's attack, but the problem was that he was throwing his life away.

He was a troublesome opponent for Julian and the others, who were willing to lay down their lives and had a policy of not taking the lives of

their enemies as much as possible.

Loic was desperate.

- "I've heard your voice before. You are the prince of the Kingdom, right?"

-What's it to you?

- "Nothing ... I just asked. If you want Louise, you'll have to kill me first!"
"Tsk!"

It would be easy to knock him down, but if he made a bad move, Loic would die.

Because of that, Julian was forced to have a tough battle

◊

On board another ship.

Hugh, who was leading the knights and soldiers of the House of Druille, yelled.

"You guys hurry up and defeat them!"

-We tried! But the enemy is very strong.

Hugh was fighting Greg and Jilk.

Greg, naked and with a machine gun in hand, consulted with Jilk who was in the corner.

"Jilk, cover me, will you?"

"Are you stupid enough to attack naked?"

Greg showed the bitter Jilk a small device that he pulled from his pants.

"If you have this thing, it will keep you safe and sound from bullets.

Luxon told me."

- ... Where did you take it from? And don't come near me.

Greg, who tucked the device back into his pants, held the machine gun at his waist. "Jilk, take the rear guard!" Hyaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!

The enemy was thrown into chaos when Greg began to attack and pulled the trigger on the machine gun.

- Why is he naked !?

"N-It can't be. This guy is immune to bullets!"

"Then with magic ... Buh!"

Jilk from behind was attacking the knight who was about to use magic.

Hugh raised his right hand when he saw his ally being knocked down by a non-lethal rubber bullet.

"You barbarian apes of the Kingdom, you thought you could defeat us with ---" "Here!"

However, Greg also knew from his previous experience that the blessing of the Holy Tree was dangerous.

As you guessed it, I have been working on a countermeasure for that as well. Hugh was sent flying backward by Greg's jump kick.

"D-Damn ...

Greg turned his gun on Hugh as he tried to stand up.

-Checkmate. If they're going to use the power of the Sacred Tree, I'll finish them off before they do. That's it.

"Yes, I found a weak point!", He spoke with such attitude, but that was only brute force. Then Jilk walked over, drew his gun --- and shot Hugh.

—It hurrrrrttsssss !!

Seeing Hugh struggling to maintain his face, Jilk pulled out his handcuffs.

"When did you get good? Should have fired from the start. Come on, I'll restrain you."

This was a containment device prepared by Luxon and could not be easily destroyed.

It was a device that you couldn't easily get rid of despite having the emblems of the six great noble families.

Hugh protested, his face red and puffy at being held back by the two men.

"Don't be silly, guys. What they are doing is the work of a brainless idiot. I don't know if they will help Louise, but if they do, the Republic will surely pay dearly for it. I have remembered their faces. I will never forgive them."

When Greg and Jilk looked at each other, they started laughing.

-It is true. Baltfault didn't think of any of that, did he?

"He's an idiot, you know. He's an idiot in a good way and a bad one.

Even if we talk about in the future."

They continued, leaving Hugh behind.

"H-Hey, wait! Are you planning to leave me like this !? I-I'm Hugh of the six nobles!"

Greg turned around.

-I do not know you. I'll ask you later if you want to introduce yourself.

By the way, my name is Greg."

Jilk also waved his hand as he introduced himself.

"I am Jilk. Let's have tea together sometime."

Hugh couldn't speak when he saw their reactions.

"E-Eh?"

◇

As I was moving down the hall, defeating enemies, a person was standing there. He raised his hands with a wry smile as he held his weapon.

-I give up.

- ... That way of giving up was too easy. What are you thinking?

This person was Emile.

We had seen each other many times, but it was the first time we had talked like this. Emile scratched his cheek with his fingers, as if he was embarrassed.

"I'm not very good with fear and pain. I had the knights and soldiers of House Pleven retreat. And Louise is over there."

There was no indication that he was lying.

I lowered my gaze and was about to walk past Emile when he spoke to me.

"I don't see the knights and soldiers of House Rault. The aircraft from outside, only those of the Rault family have not left with their armed units. -

-- Could it be that they are working together?"

Emile was smiling when I stopped and looked at him.

He was glad to see my face and decided I was right.

-I knew it! I was also concerned about the timing and location of the attacks. I thought: "Surely there is someone here giving information."

It was true that the Rault House was working with us.

They were willing to help us.

"You shouldn't babble in front of the enemy. You don't know if it will make you disappear."

"You wouldn't do that. Instead, you will find that Serge is just down the road. He is very strong."

-I can't wait!! Beating up a guy who thinks he is strong is the best thing for me! - --Well, Serge is a bonus. It's Louise I want to save.

Continuing on, I saw a door where I thought Louise would be.

◇

In Louise's room, Serge was standing and moving.

The maids around Louise screamed in fright every time the ship crashed in battle.

The ship's transmissions reported one by one that they had been penetrated, implying that the enemy was close.

Footsteps were heard coming from behind the door among some crying servants. Serge took the gun in his hand ...

"You guys don't go out."

... Saying that, he pulled the trigger and fired all the bullets at the door.

The sound of gunfire echoed and they fell to the ground.

Serge kept his spear at the ready as he launched the smoking weapon.

-Get out of there.

A person kicked through the hole in the door and entered.

In his hand was a machine gun.

"I'm here to have fun."

Leon said that with a smile on his face, and then pointed his gun at Serge and fired.

For those in the Republic, where continuous fire is not common, machine guns were a threat.

However, Serge put his right hand in front of him and magically deployed his shield stopping all his bullets.

The loaded rubber bullets rolled on the ground.

Serge was disappointed to see that.

"You're a spoiled brat too. At least get real bullets. I was hoping to really crush you."

Serge was discouraged by the attack that was not intended to kill his opponent.

Leon dropped the machine gun, drew his sword, and held it in one hand.

-Strange. I love squashing people I don't like too! And I didn't like you from the moment I met you!

Leon, who said those lines as if he were a villain, attacked Serge with his sword. Serge intercepted Leon's sword with his spear and raised the corner of his mouth. "Your blow is light." Wasn't the people of the Kingdom stronger in melee !? Serge gave a front kick, doubled over Leon's body and sent him flying.

Leon wiped his mouth as he rolled on the floor and stood up calmly.

Serge could roughly predict Leon's abilities.

"You have some good skills, but you are no match for me."

Leon's expression distorted.



On the other hand.

Chris and Brad had also arrived where Narcisse was, who was leading the soldiers. As Brad pointed the gun at him, Narcisse raised his hands to surrender.

-Hey? You are not very motivated.

When Brad asked, Narcisse blurted out his true feelings.

"Because I honestly don't want to sacrifice my acquaintance and former student, Louise. I am relieved somewhere in my heart that you guys have come to save her."

Brad lowered his gun when he heard Narcisse speak.

"There are decent people in the Six Great Nobles, huh? That's a relief. I thought they were all like Pierre."

- ... Pierre is the exception. Better yet, if we're going to move on from here, we better be careful."

It was then that Chris responded to Narcisse's advice.

"Do you think we better stay behind?"

"I know you are strong. But you have no idea how scary Serge is.

-Scary?

Previously, Narcisse went into a dungeon with Leon and his friends.

In doing so, he also saw the strength of Leon and his team, but continued to think that Serge was different.

"Serge is very strong." A few years ago, he killed a monster with his bare hands without using the blessing of the Holy Tree. And it was not a small one, it was a large one two meters long.

A few years ago Narcisse would have been about fifteen.

If he killed the monster with his bare hands at that time, he could be

really dangerous.

But Brad didn't seem interested.

-Great. Oh, Chris, do you have handcuffs?

-Yes.

Brad looked at Chris as he removed the handcuffs from his loincloth and made a worried face.

"Why did you put it there?" I don't want to touch him, so you put the handcuffs on him.

-It's okay. But the downside of the loincloth is that it has no pockets.

Other than that, it's perfect ... Mm? It seems that Baltfault is getting closer to his goal.

He wore a communication device in his ear that looked like a headset, from which information was delivered to him.

Narcisse was upset with the two men for not taking him seriously.

"Are you listening to me !? Serge is where Louise is. Serge is really dangerous! It is not only strong. He is a cruel man. If they leave it like that, Leon will die.

Brad gave a little sigh in front of Narcisse.

"You are Narcisse, right? You don't understand it at all."

-Hey?

Narcisse was handcuffed by Chris, but decided to ignore the strange warmth.

Because you don't want to think about it too much.

Chris talked about Leon while handcuffing him.

"I don't know what you're thinking, but Baltfault is a true hero. There is no way he can lose to an opponent who is only strong. To begin with, being strong is not enough to win, which is why it is so difficult."

Brad nodded and worried about his opponent.

-Yes. Isn't he going to beat this Serge up? Baltfault is a horrible guy. I, for my part, don't want to fight Baltfault.

-I think the same. In a practice fight, it's okay. But in a real fight, he would definitely run.

Narcisse thought as he listened to their trust in Leon.

Do you get along with him? Or is it the opposite?

◇

While Leon came to Louise's room. Julian was fighting outside with Loic.

- This guy is really trying to die !?

Julian, who was fighting him, avoided Loic's blow and destroyed his left arm. Loic's armed unit was wrecked and he had no weapons.

Therefore, the only attack Loic could do was to deliver melee punches.

Julian was fighting to avoid killing Loic and trying to stop him.

"I have a hard time containing you." --- Your name is Loic, right? You will really die if you fight like this!

He called Loic out of consideration and to make him understand what he was doing.

- "And with that?"

-What?

- "I'm almost dead. There is nothing left for me. Nothing remains!"

When Loic attacked again, Julian caught him and threw him onto

Einhorn's deck. Then he opened the booth and saw Loic.

His eyes were bloodshot.

When he saw Loic earlier, he looked like a nobleman, but now he looked quite rough. A figure with a sharp look in his eyes and wrinkled cheeks.

From the way he looked slimmer than before, it seems like he had a really hard time.

When Loic emerged from the cockpit, he grasped his sword as it was. It seems like he wanted to face his opponent with his sword even though Julian was in his armed unit.

"Y-You!"

-... I have nothing. My family wanted me to die. I don't know where I belong! Julian could easily guess Loic's current position.

His family wanted him dead.

Such was Loic's pity.

Julian opened his hatch and stepped out, picking up his sword in the same way.

If you don't want to live with that shame, I'll end it here.

He didn't attack him because he didn't like him.

Julian sympathized with Loic and thought it would be nice to end up here.

Seeing Julian step out of the booth, Loic seemed a bit happy to see him.

Because Julian's eyes told him he was going to kill him.

"Thank you, Prince of the Realm." You gave me a place to die. And I thank you for giving my death meaning.

He couldn't take his own life, but they didn't give him a place to die

either.

It seems that even a fight like this would have made sense for Loic, who was waiting to be eliminated by his family.

"I'll get this over with."

While they both held their swords, Noelle stepped out onto the bridge.

She came out gasping and then walking to stop the fight between Julian and Loic. -... Noelle, don't come!

Noelle approached them when Julian told her to get back into the ship.

When Loic looked at Noelle, he had a complex look on his face.

Quickly he returned his gaze from Julian and went straight to speak to Noelle. -... Noelle! I ... I ... I liked you. It's a fact that I was in love with you.

"Loic, let this go. You don't have to go that far. I don't want Louise to be euthanized. I don't want her to die! The same goes for you. You don't need to die!"

-I'm already almost dead! Staying alive is in vain.

Loic's eyes filled with tears, and then he lowered the tip of his sword and turned.

"A nobleman who loses the blessing of the Holy Tree is frowned upon by those around him." I have no reason to live. Sooner or later, they will assassinate me and I will die. In that case ... I want to die fighting here.

"If you are going to die eventually, make your death a little more meaningful." That was Loic's wish.

Julian didn't let go of his sword stance, but he made time to let the two speak. Noelle kept trying to convince Loic.

"Just get out of the house!" You can live without your blessing. You don't have to be Loic of the six great nobles. You can live like a simple Loic!

Loic laughed while crying.

-... You're wrong. You're wrong!

"Loic?"

"I said I loved you, but I didn't know anything about you." I didn't want to know! All I did was tie you up, make you suffer and hurt you. I don't deserve to live like this.

The reason Loic wanted to die was because he had hurt Noelle.

I was able to put distance between us and for the first time I was able to look at myself objectively.

Loic dropped his sword and put his hands in front of Julian.

"Your Highness Julian, I honestly have no strength left to fight." It's a selfish wish, but I'd like it to end with a single attack.

Julian regained control of his sword and put his strength into it.

-It's okay. Do you have any last word?

Loic smiled. Somehow, he looked happy.

"Noelle... I'm sorry. I'm also sorry for the trouble I've caused you, Your Highness. I want to apologize to the Count as well. Tell him I'm sorry."

-I'll pass on your words.

As Julian was about to strike, Marie's fist slammed into the side of Loic's face with her arms outstretched.

"Are you kidding me, you damn brat!"

"Owh! Gohoh!"



Watching Loic roll across the deck, Julian stopped and lowered his sword.

-Marie? E-Ehmm, you don't think this is the scene where I'm going to grant Loic his wish, do you?

Julian was taken aback by Marie's intrusion.

And Noelle was worried too.

-Marie? E-Ehmm, Loic flew away.

You'd think little Marie's fists wouldn't be strong, but Julian knew the force of her fists better than anyone.

Marie's fists are very strong.

It was no joke, her strength could send men twice his size flying with a single fist.

Marie reached out to Loic with her fist and grabbed his hair with her left hand, lifting him up. Then she slapped him with her right hand. She continued to slap him with the back of her right hand. "I-I'm sorry, forgive me ..."

Both cheeks were very swollen as Loic continued to be beaten.

Marie regulated her erratic breathing before bringing Loic's face closer to hers.

-Why do you want to die? Why is life not worth living? Have you just had your heart broken and do you think you will become a tragic hero?

How disgusting.

"They told me that ...

At Loic, who couldn't speak well, Marie looked at him with contempt and

silenced him.

There was so much power in Marie now.

"That's why they reject you. When your heart is broken, you move on.

Are you going to die for persisting in that? You're kidding me, huh? Ahh !?"

"Urki!"

As she pressed down on the scared Loic and rolled him to the ground, Marie dropped her threatening tone and began to admonish him.

"There are people who want to live, but have no choice but to die. I won't really let you die from just that."

"B-But ...

-But nothing! Agree? We were born into this world and we have to continue living until we die. You are young, you still have a lot ahead of you, and are you going to die because your heart was broken once? Don't be naive! Do you think it's cool to die gracefully? You're an Idiot.

Marie had a serious look in her eyes, despite her acting ridiculous.

Julian found Marie's words strangely compelling.

Why is Marie trying to convince this guy?

There should be no connection between Loic and Marie.

But maybe it was because Marie couldn't bear to see the desperate Loic.

"What's really cool is surviving to the end. The coolest person is the one who fights as hard as he can, and still survives. Now you're just a brat who says he's going to die because his heart was broken. That's not cool at all.

No wonder Noelle hates you."

Loic looked down.

"What do you know about me? Do you have any idea how I felt when I lost everything as a noble and was ready to die?"

-I do not know! You have the nerve to ask someone else to feel the same way about you when you didn't know how Noelle felt. If you are a man, you should go up from the bottom. You say you have lost the blessing of the Holy Tree, but we can live without it from the beginning. I don't even have noble status. All I have is debt.

Marie forced Loic to his feet and hit him lightly in the stomach with her fist.

—It's naive for a person to die that simple. A person at the base of the pyramid cannot even choose how to live his own life. You have time on your hands and you can start over.

"O-Okay ...

Marie hugged Loic, who was already crying.

Julian, who had been listening to the story, thought it would be difficult.

However, seeing as Marie had convinced Loic to join her, it wasn't far-fetched.

He quickly climbed into his armed unit and alerted his surroundings.

The Republic fleet does not attack Einhorn. Are you afraid of Baltfault?

No, maybe it's because Baltfault has the Guardian Crest?

Einhorn, flying the flag of the pirates of heaven, was in no position to be shot down.

But the fleet, led by Fernand, did not interfere.

Now it only remains for Baltfault to bring Louise back as planned.

Chapter 10 - The User

-... Kahah!

When I was attacked by the handle of Serge's spear, I was pushed back and it caused me to vomit.

I'm sorry I made a mess in the room where Louise is, but that wasn't important now.

Unlike me, who is in rough shape, Serge was still full of energy and unmarked.

In other words, none of my attacks had hurt him.

"What did you do to make yourself so strong?"

Serge is strong. He is definitely strong.

I had heard that he had trained as an adventurer, but I didn't expect him to be that strong.

Serge, who kicked me and made me suffer, had an aggressive personality and was ruthless.

-That's it!? You are a hero !? What "Evil Knight"!? Your strength is based on lost items! Without that you are trash!"

I struggled to hold on as he trampled me mercilessly.

Blood was coming out of the corner of my mouth, and I managed to get up and wipe it off with my hand.

Serge was in a much better shape, although he should be tired from the constant attacks.

"Haa ... haa ... Y-You, you look pretty good."

Attacking someone is an act of physical exhaustion.

It seemed unnatural to see that Serge wasn't breathing heavy as he attacked me.

Looking at me unsteady, Serge took something out of his pocket, drank the liquid from a small vial, and tossed it on the floor.

-A drug...?

"A drug to strengthen the body, now I can keep beating you up." Serge's gaze fell on Louise as he said that.

The words were not directed at me, but at Louise.

Louise's face, surrounded by her servants, was blue and she shook her head.

-Serge. Stop.

Serge spread his hands, shattering Louise's hopes.

"The fun has just begun! I'm going to show you how he can vomit blood, guts and die a very pitiful death!"

He's an extreme guy.

But still, a drug that strengthens the body.

This was mentioned in Marie's strategy information.

It has the effect of temporarily increasing your status, and is probably a standard item in games.

"Are you ever going to fight me on your own?"

"There are no rules for killing each other, you know."

I agree with that.

But...

Serge's fist, with his enhanced physical abilities, came up to me, hit me, and sent me flying up to the wall.

I hit the wall with my back, shattering the wall I fell into.

"Urgh ...

I spat blood, and when Louise saw me, she passed by the servants and stood in front of me, spreading her hands.

Serge's eyes narrowed.

-What are you doing?

-It's enough. Don't hurt Leon any more.

"He was the one who attacked first!"

-But still! ... Still, stop.

As Serge held his spear, the people around him stopped him.

"Young Serge! Louise-san has a mission to do! I have been ordered to deliver her to the tops of the Sacred Tree unharmed!

The maid stopped him and Serge lowered the tip of his spear.

The way Serge looked at me was very cold.

"I am sincerely disappointed. I was hoping we could play a little more."

Louise helped me to painfully stand up, and then she assisted me out of the room as I was.

The maids tried to stop her, but Louise strictly ordered them to stop.

"Don't come!... I'm not going anywhere. But if he stays here, he will kill Leon, and I will leave until I am in a safe place. I'll be right back."

I left the room with being supported by Louise's shoulder.



Louise walked down the aisle of the ship, lending her shoulder to Leon. She couldn't stop crying.

She was saddened to see how Serge hurt Leon, who looked like her brother, and she was sad to see him hurt.

"You are really stupid!"

-Hahaha I'm sorry.

Before leaving, Leon's message to Alberg was, "I'm sorry."

Louise now understood what that meant.

"This is what you meant when my father told me."

-... Are you angry?

-I'm furious! You are going to be in big trouble for your actions. Before I die, I will ask for your life to be saved, but I don't know what will happen.

I'm going to defend Leon and the others before jumping in as a sacrifice.

However, I cannot guarantee that they will be safe.

"You don't have to do this, Leon. Its my choice. Like I told you before, I don't mind being sacrificed. I'll be there for my brother."

She was very scared.

She wanted someone to help her.

But Louise could no longer bear the sight of her brother's suffering in her dreams every night.

I'm sure my brother won't feel lonely if I'm there for him.

In the past, she thought of it as an atonement for her sins by not being able to help him, and she accepted it.

Then, unexpected words came out of Leon's mouth.

"You've always had a strong sense of duty."

-Eh?

He said those things as if he had known her for a long time, and immediately floated the question of, "Didn't we know each other for a short time?"

But Louise had nightmares every night and her judgment was impaired.

"I was going to disappear once I fulfilled my New Years Festival promise. But then it became a problem because the Sacred Tree did something unnecessary."

"W-What are you ...?"

-... It's me. You didn't know?

- Stop teasing me! It's not funny.

Leon's words sounded like they were her little brother's.

That was never going to happen, and yet Louise's heart wished it would.

Leon held his stomach and smiled. However, you could see that he was in pain. It was a painful sight.

"Didn't you blame me for wetting the bed when we slept together a long time ago? ... You were angry and didn't speak to me for a week."

Louise hadn't told Leon that story.

"H-How do you know?"

"I wanted to make up for it, so I made a paper ring as a gift. I apologized in front of everyone for what I did, and you forgave me."

Finally, Leon apologized in front of his family for what he had done, and

Louise forgave him.

The apology was a ring, and Leon, who was in a good mood at the time, even promised to marry her.

I didn't want to talk too much because the confession process was terrible.

Louise couldn't stop crying.

-Heavens. How could you!? Why are you telling me this now?

Leon explained it quietly as he hugged Louise, who was sobbing.

"It wouldn't be a problem for me to be born again, would it? All I wanted to do was appear for a moment. I wanted to see everyone's faces."

-You should have told me! I've always wanted ... to apologize to you!

Louise couldn't speak as she cried into Leon's chest.

She thought her intuition was correct and believed that her brother was reborn in front of her. She closed her eyes to the unnatural parts and only looked at the facts she wanted to believe.

"I didn't want to tell you because you were going to cry like that. I do not hold grudges. Didn't I say that in my last moments?"

Louise nodded and remembered the moment.

All he could do was look at Leon, who seemed to be in pain.

Leon spoke of the moment.

"Do you really think I want you to sacrifice yourself? I was smiling to the end, right?

-Yes. Yes. You did.



This happened when his brother's death was approaching.

Around the suffering Leon were all the great doctors Alberg had assembled. There was nothing to do about it, and everyone was looking with their heads down. Alberg asked for help.

"I'll get you what you want! So help me save my son! I have heard that you are a great doctor. That you can even bring the dead back to life!"

The famous doctor shook his head.

"The dead do not come back to life. It is an exaggerated gossip. I'm sorry for your son, but I have no idea why this is happening to him. I have no idea why he is weakening. It's like his soul wants to leave his body.

Oddly enough, there was no disease in Leon's body. He just got weaker.

So the doctors couldn't treat it.

"That's what the master of curses said! So keep that soul together!"

They had assembled a group of experts on that sort of thing, but they had all given up on the idea that there was anything that could be done about it.

-... We are doctors. We are not masters of curses.

Alberg squeezed his hand, and blood seeped from it.

Louise squeezed Leon's hand.

"Leon, you can't die. You made a promise, right? There are many of them. If you do not comply and die, I will never forgive you. You're going to be a guardian, right? You're going to marry your sister, right?"

Hearing this, Leon smiled.

It was painful to see him smile, he seemed to be in pain.

-I'm sorry. But... I will always keep my promise. When you have problems... come to me. When Leon began to suffer, he could not speak.

Louise shook her head and then hugged Leon's body.

Even as a child, when she heard Leon's soul was leaving him, she desperately tried to hold it together with her body.

-Do not go. Don't leave your sister!

In the end, Leon had died that day.

◇

"I didn't ask for you to be sacrificed."

"T-Then why could I hear you? You screamed for help!"

"The Sacred Tree does not bloom. There must be a reason for this."

-Reason?

"We'll look into it. So, until then, I need you to trust me and follow me.

Before she knew it, Louise had been led onto the deck by Leon. That's where Arroganz was.

Soldiers were approaching Arroganz, and armed units were all around him. Leon turned to look at Louise.

-I'm sorry about everything. But we will be together from now on.

Louise hugged Leon.

Right after that ---

-What!?

--- The deck of the aircraft began to shake violently when Leon's voice was heard in panic.

When Louise turned her gaze to the surroundings, the altitude was increasing. "Is it floating?"

Einhorn collided with a large aircraft that was stuck.

It was as if he was being guided by the tops of the Sacred Tree.

Leon hugged Louise and tried to enter Arroganz.

-Let's go.

"W-Wait a minute, there's something strange."

◇

Serge was running down the corridor of the ship.

"She tricked me at the last minute!"

Serge, who had been keeping an eye on Louise and Leon, ran out onto the deck. When he arrived, he saw Leon and Louise.

When he saw them hugging, something happened inside Serge

"Do you really think you can get away with it?"

Leon was silent, but Louise answered Serge.

"Serge, leave me alone for now."

Serge, who was listening to the conversation between Leon and Louise, started laughing like a fool.

"Do you really think your brother has come back to life? You really are a stupid fool! Did you forget that this guy is the same age as your brother?"

If Leon really was the reincarnation of his brother, then it was strange that they were the same age.

After being told the obvious, Louise looked at Leon's face in surprise.

-Leon?

Looking at the silent Leon, Serge drew his pistol.

-You are a swindler. A weak Louise could easily be fooled, but don't think that the same is true of those around you. I'm going to kill you right here, you false hero who only knows how to talk.

Louise desperately asked Leon a question.

-Leon? Just tell me one thing. What did the ring you gave me say? It was our little secret. You know it right? Truth!?

A ring made of paper and written by his brother.

This was a secret between the two of them and a question that no third party could answer. Leon replied.

-Did I write "I love you"?

He replied without making eye contact with Louise, but that was a mistake.

When Louise walked away from Leon, she expressed her disgust.



-You tricked me.

"It's a shame because things were going so well until the last minute."

The great airship had reached the top of the Sacred Tree.

Louise took a step back and distanced herself from Leon.

When Leon tried to grab her by force, Serge fired his gun between them on the ground. -Do not move. Stay here. Look, there are flowers on the Sacred Tree.

You could see various flowers on the Tree.

Hundreds of slender rope-like tentacles emerged from the white chrysanthemum-like flowers.

Those tentacles were looking for Louise.

And then a voice was heard.

"Sister ... where are you? Sister, where are you?"

Louise realized that this was her brother's voice and raised her voice.

-Here! I'm here! Leon, your sister is here!

The tentacles that responded to the voice moved closer to Louise.

As Leon, who had only been watching, rushed to stop her, Serge fired another shot.

He was mercilessly shooting at Leon.

-Dammit!

Leon sacrificed himself to prevent the bullets from hitting Louise.

That's why he couldn't reach her.

Louise herself jumped off the deck and was caught by the tentacles and carried to a flower as is.

"Louise!"

Leon held out his hand in frustration, but as if he had given up, he looked at Serge.

-Second round. No one will help you this time.

After firing all of his bullets, Serge dropped his gun again.

He took out of his pocket a drug to strengthen his body.

He drank it and threw the empty bottle away.

Then he picked up his spear.

Leon walked over to Serge.

There were no signs of picking up a weapon.

"Hey, is that sword at your waist an ornament? At least take out your gun
..."

"Get out of the way."

-... What!?

In an instant, Leon closed the distance and slammed his fist into Serge's face, hitting him against the deck.

It was a single hit.

Serge was on his back when he was hit once by Leon's fist.

As he was lying there, Leon headed towards Arroganz.

Luxon had joined him there.

[It doesn't go as planned, right? You haven't got Louise back, have you?]

"I almost had it! Shit! It was because of that Leon for having done something like a secret between the two that the plans went to waste."

Serge tried to get up, but the damage was more severe than expected and he was unable to stand.

The drug made it less painful, but he couldn't move his body.

Leon got on Arroganz and flew away, ignoring Serge and the others.

With a bloody nose, Serge's hatred for Leon grew.

"S-So he wasn't being serious. T-That bastard used me, huh?"

Serge trembled with rage as he realized he let himself get hit in front of Louise on purpose. He had never been humiliated like this before.

The trust he had built so far collapsed with a bang.

◇

Inside the Arroganz cockpit.

As I approached the flower blooming in the tops of the Sacred Tree, I saw that it had grown disgusting tentacles.

"Is this thing really a sacred plant?"

It was very grotesque.

Hundreds of tentacles made their way through the flower and wouldn't let me get close. Arranged around it was a cylindrical floating machine.

"What is that, Luxon?"

[It is the defense equipment manufactured by Ideal. I was interfering with it, but I couldn't analyze it.]

"Serge, have you really gone that far?"

[It took some time, but I've already analyzed it. Normally, I would have

liked to burn him with the main body cannon as soon as possible, but failed to convince him, so it was impossible.]

"It was working to the end!" So what is that flower about?

The reason I parted company with Luxon was for him to investigate the flower.

We hadn't been able to examine it until now because it was blocked by Ideal's defense team.

[That has nothing to do with the Sacred Tree. It is connected to it, but it is only receiving power.]

-It's something more?

[I detect a reaction from a magical armed unit. I'm not saying it's a full body, but it's a spell-possessed form that has a partial core.]

-Are you kidding me.

I imagined him as the old black knight who fought in the war against the old Principality of Fanoss.

That old man tried to kill me.

A magical armed unit... is a weapon prepared by the new humans to fight against Luxon and other artificial intelligences. In other words, it is an inconvenient substitute.

[It is true.]

"You're telling me that captured Louise!" That means...

If magic merged with her, there would be no way to save her.

Because once the magical armed unit merges with a human, they become inseparable.

And people who merge, don't live long.

[No, if the core is still there, I can save it. It's lucky that some of that remains. However, if we don't save her immediately, they will surely merge.]

"Then we'll get her back in the blink of an eye."

But still, why did the magic unit choose Louise? Did you go to the trouble to speak like Leon? Was Leon really captured?

No, that cannot be.

Don't tell me he took Leon's soul.

I couldn't organize my thoughts.

Then Luxon warned me.

[I see. What the magical armed unit was looking for was a person with the blessing of the Holy Tree.]

-What?

[It is attacking.]

As the flowers of the Sacred Tree withered to rest, seeds emerged from them.

The large seeds cracked and huge hands came out.

What forced him to hatch was similar to the black knight's magical armed unit he had seen earlier.

"Hey, could it be that Louise is in on that?"

[She is being absorbed. She is being used as a source of energy. What very annoying things. You want to destroy it?]

"Not until I save Louise."

When I approached with Arroganz, the magical armed unit reacted.

It was using Louise's voice.

[All right. These body parts are surprisingly... very good. The depleted supply of energy will become an inexhaustible supply of energy! At this rate, I will destroy everything in this world!]

Facing the magical armed unit with both hands outstretched, I let Arroganz attack with a slash from his tomahawk.

But it didn't happen.

The ax broke.

"Exactly how hard is that??"

[He's not like the Black Knight. Since it is close to being a perfect body, consider its performance to be much higher.]

"You should have said it before!"

I quickly took a distance and dropped the broken hatchet.

Even if I switched to a rifle and fired, he could avoid it all.

-It's fast!?

[Of course. It is a weapon called a magical armed unit that ancient humans fought with. However, even with this, according to the data, its performance is less than 50% of capacity.]

"I can't understand why it's so hard to beat this guy and save Louise."

So? How do we do this?"

I dodged the magic fist coming from him and waited for Luxon's response.

[I'll take Louise out of her magic armor and just penetrate the core. The problem is that you have not been able to convince her. Louise herself will not attempt to leave her magical armed unit. Rather...]

He drew his scythe and I caught the attack from the magical armed unit that attacked us in the middle of our conversation.

The magic armed unit spoke to me.

[... I will never forgive you, I will never forgive you for cheating on me.]

I could hear Louise's voice hating me. This seemed to be her own will.

-She's aware!?

Kicking me away and out of reach, the magical armed unit spread its arms.

-Damn!

As I walked away, Arroganz's leg was pierced.

There was a tail that extended from the waist of the magic armor, and it was reeling.

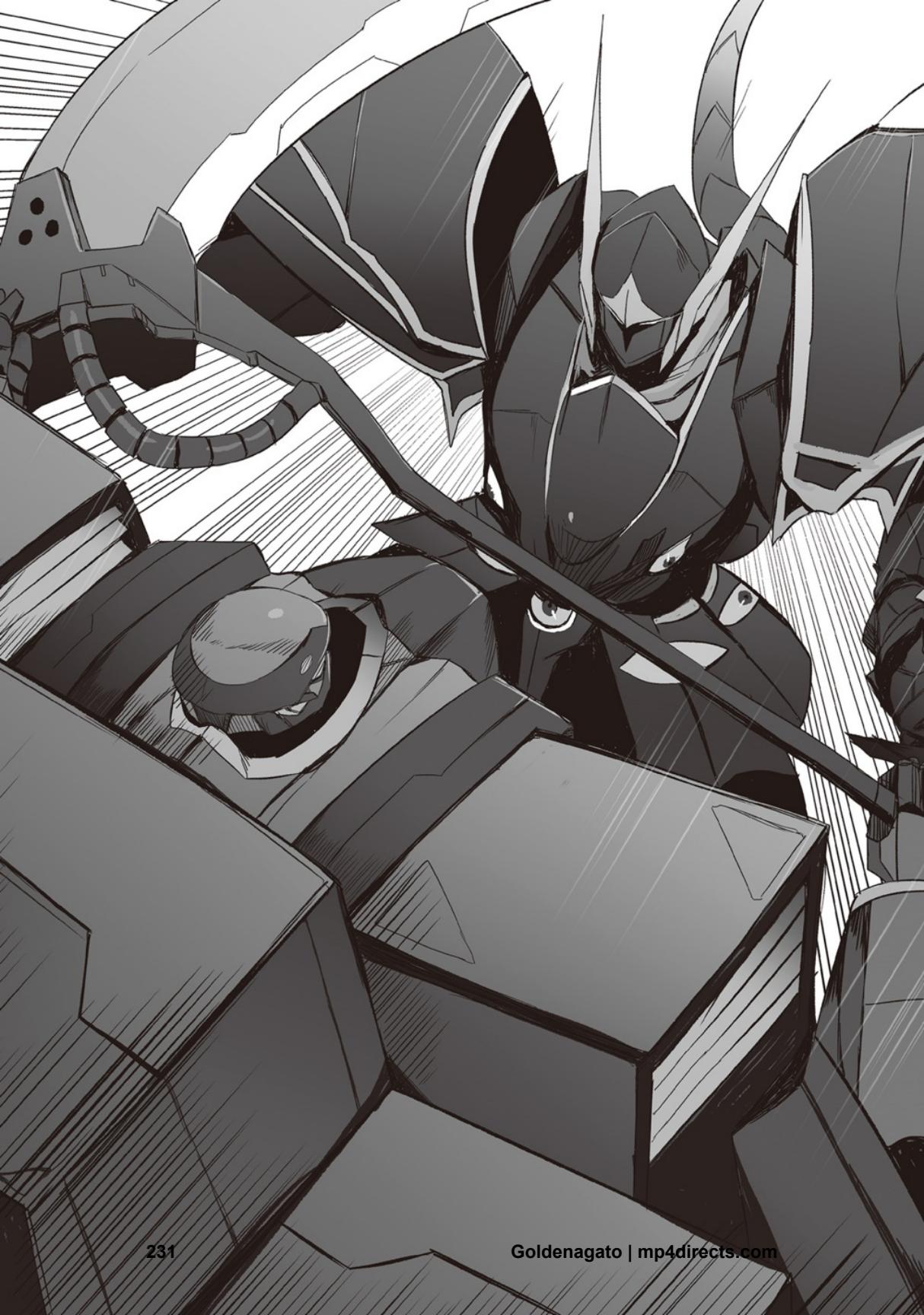
"That tail is a threat."

[The magical armed unit itself is a threat. But still...]

I could hear two voices coming from that armed unit.

One was from Louise and the other was a voice that appears to be that of her deceased brother, Leon. [Aah, I can feel Leon next to me.]

[Onee-chan, let's take him down together. I can't forgive him for cheating on you.] [... Yeah, that's fine, Leon.]



As the magical armed unit closed the distance, I accelerated and fled.

Even when I tried to push them away, they slowly caught up to Arroganz's performance. "I have nightmares about the time I fought that old Black Knight."

[This is no time for jokes. The resurrection of the magical armed unit was out of the question... What are you going to do, Master?]

The magical armed unit that was chasing Arroganz caused naked eyes to appear all over his body and released the magic from it.

The area around the magical armed unit filled with cold air, and several sharp ice needles floated in midair.

The eyes attacked Arroganz, but even if he avoided them, they would follow him to some extent. "Missiles!"

[Intercepting]

As the lid of the container Arroganz was carrying was opened, the missiles loaded in it were fired, destroying all the ice.

Then the loaded drones were deployed.

The drones with Gatling cannons in spheres hovered around Arroganz and downed all their attacks.

Arroganz had live ammunition.

The magic armed unit was firing magic, and the sounds of explosions and magic pops echoed in the surroundings.

There were a lot of flashy fights.

"Well, let's see what we can do."

As we ran, I thought of a way to rescue Louise.

◇

Marie watched as Louise was taken over by the magical armed unit and watched the battle from the Einhorn Bridge.

When Anjie saw the appearance of this magical armed unit, it seemed to remind her of the Black Knight.

"Why did that appear here?" What the hell is going on?

Livia also worried about Leon, who was fighting a magical armor. "Will Leon be okay?"

"We have defeated the Black Knight, but we do not know the capabilities of the enemy."

-It cannot be!

Around Einhorn floated Jilk, Brad, Greg, and Chris, with their respective armed units.

Julian was waiting on the bridge, distrusting Loic, whom he brought with him, at least for a moment.

Marie asked Loic what was going on.

"Do they have such things in the Sacred Tree?"

"N-No, I've never heard of that."

Loic's tone towards Marie was quite impressive.

"In the first place, I've never heard of such a thing." Not once in the history of the Republic has there been a flower on the Sacred Tree.

"Why would they want to sacrifice someone for something like that?"

"It was the decision of the heads of the six families." I think they were terrified that they would keep losing to Count Baltfault, and then surrender with the Holy Tree.

Julian had a subtle expression on his face.

"Is it because of Baltfault's presence?"

"No, sooner or later they would have offered it as a sacrifice." For the Republic, the Sacred Tree is an absolute existence. And furthermore, if they hear voices from the Sacred Tree, some of them will believe it.

Marie raised her head.

If Louise dies, Alberg will be the last boss! I do not want that! We've come so far and everything we did doesn't make sense --- That's not...

Noelle?

Noelle, hugging the jar containing the little offspring, looked out.

The emblem on the back of Noelle's right hand glowed faintly. Julian watched the battle and was angered by his inability to do anything.

"I wish I could help, but wouldn't we be a hindrance if we got in there?"

Julian and the others' armed unit was a degraded copy of Arroganz.

They couldn't beat the opponent Arroganz was fighting with.

Marie asked Julian for help.

—Julian, don't talk like that, help me! Even Arroganz can't beat him, right? Look, they all have better maneuvering skills than Leon, right? There are all kinds of things that you can do to cover the performance of the aircraft with your arms.

While Marie was asking her to help Leon, Anjie corrected her mistake.

-You're wrong.

-What do you mean?

"Leon is strong." The reason they are fighting now is because he wants to save Louise. If they could only handle that, then Leon too ...

Noelle opened her mouth when she heard Anjie's story.

-Let me do it.

When Marie turned to look at Noelle, the little sapling also glowed faintly.

-Hey? Noelle, what are you ---?

"The only way to get Louise out of this is to convince her to get out of there. But as it is, you can't talk to her. But I... if I got close enough, my voice could reach her."

"C-Can you do that!?"

"I-I think so ..."

Livia did not allow Noelle's uncertain words.

-No. I can't let you do something rash.

However, it was Loic who came to the rescue.

-It's not impossible. I have heard that the priestess can speak to an crest bearer with her mind. I read in the documents that can be connected through the Sacred Tree. If they can touch each other directly, it should be possible to at least have a conversation.

Marie was quick to stop him.

This was because Noelle was the priestess of the little sapling, not of the Sacred Tree.

-Wait! The little sapling and the Sacred Tree are two different things! I don't want Noelle to be reckless.

Then, Livia's hair floated like a fluffy tide.

Lines of white light rose above his body, creating a pattern.

"Gyaaaa!" It's shining!

Marie screamed, and Anjie spoke up annoyed.

-Shut up. Livia, can you do it?

"Not yet, I'm not in full control yet."

"I'm going to help." Noelle, come with me.

-Hey? E-Ehmm ...

When Noelle, unable to keep up with the situation, looked confused, Anjie took her hand.

"You're going to make your voice heard, right? You will have to convince her, right? Then Livia and I will help you."

Reluctantly, Noelle took the hand Livia offered her.

Livia placed the sapling of the Sacred Tree in the center of where they were.

The little sapling's glow intensified as the three of them held hands and formed a circle.

"It will only be for a short time. If you're going to try to convince her, you'd better hurry. -I understand you."

When Noelle closed her eyes, there was a change in the scene outside.

The magic armed unit had slowed down.

Marie saw the three wrapped in a pale light and could not understand what was happening.

Can not be. Don't tell me these chicks are using their own holy powers?

They don't have tools or anything! How the hell did they do it !?

Marie, surprised by Livia's rapid growth, looked outside.

It only remains that I can convince her.

◇

Noelle looked at the strange landscape.

Great. This way I can reach to speak to Louise.

The landscape around her was blurry, with only her consciousness jumping to a place that could be called the spirit world.

As she ran around to see where to go, she saw something burning brightly.

-Here. Don't walk away from us.

The voice was Anjie's.

What surprised Noelle was that she could see Anjie's fire of hatred inside her. She was anger itself.

"E-Ehmm ..."

Nearby, you could see Livia's emotions.

It was sordid jealousy.

Looking at them in human form, Noelle was concerned about their appearance.

Livia took Noelle's hand.

"Let's do what we have to do for now."

It was horrible, but right now she would rather save Louise than worry about it. "O-Okay."

She was terrified by the feelings they both had towards her, but at the same time, she could see that they both felt the same for Leon.

Noelle looked for Louise.

Louise, I swear I will bring you back and tell you everything I want to tell

you!

◇

Louise's spirit world.

Little Leon was hugging Louise from behind.

They were both naked due to being in the spirit world. However, the outline was blurry.



He only needed to understand why they were there.

[Why don't you kill him, sister?]

When little Leon begged for that, Louise accepted it.

-It's okay. All your wishes will be granted by your sister.

Then, the magic armor attacked Arroganz.

Arroganz had been cornered by the magical armor that showed its overwhelming efficiency. A space for both.

Louise was happy.

"Leon, we're going to be together from now on, right?"

[Yes. We'll be together forever. You will listen to what I ask from now on, right, sister?]

"Yes, I'll give you anything you want. Because I..."

So, the people who entered the two's space were Anjie, Livia... and Noelle. When Noelle found Louise, she screamed at her.

-I found you! Louise, what the hell are you doing !?

"Noelle?!"

When Louise became hostile, the spirit world began to rage.

As Anjie spread her hands, a magic circle appeared and blocked the attacks that rained down on them.

"Noelle, hurry up and convince her!"

Livia had prepared a path into Louise's spirit world.

However, it appears that they forcibly interrupted, and were unable to

stay long. "Hurry up as soon as you can, please." This power ... is difficult to control. Seeing Livia in distress, Noelle began to convince Louise that she was in pain. "Louise, stop it. Leon lied to get you out of there. He was only trying to help you."

-Shut up. Shut up, shut up! It has stained my precious memories! For the memories that I really cherished --- I won't forgive him. I will never forgive him.

Louise was not in her right mind.

Her brother behind her smiled at her, hugging her.

[You can't forgive him, can you sister? So let's kill them. I hate them too. Kill them all, sister.]

-So it is. I'll get rid of that filthy woman who stole my Leon from me!

When Louise wished to eliminate Noelle, a blizzard occurred in the spirit world.

When the three of them were about to be expelled from the spirit world, the magical armed unit was in full force in the real world.

Louise's squeezed magic power was attacking Arroganz.

-Hahaha! Break it! The fake Leon has to completely disappear!

She was going to kill Leon, who cared so much.

The sight of this frustrated Noelle.

"What really happened to you?" Where is your usual way of acting?

You were so protective of Leon.

Louise's expression distorted and she drew her anger, her hatred deep in Noelle. "What did you know about that when you stole my Leon?"

"You, your brother ...

-I wanted him. I loved him! And yet my pretty Leon... chose you. Do you have any idea how frustrating it was for me? And yet, if you are going to deprive me even of this happiness that I finally got, I'll...!! You!!

The magic armed unit increased its power.

The next thing that was known was that the battle outside was frozen in the surroundings. The leaves and branches of the Sacred Tree were frozen and a blizzard was blowing around it. A magical armor with two blades made of ice went to cut Arroganz. Arroganz tried to avoid it with both arms, but both were cut off.

-Lion!

Noelle screamed, and Louise laughed at the sight.

"I'm going to take Leon from you this time. Then I'll take Leon from you and he'll be with me forever. Noelle looked at Louise."

"You, really, with your brother ..."

It was Leon, who was fighting in the real world, who said beyond that.

- "Do you think your real brother would choose to sacrifice you?"

She heard Leon's voice and Louise stopped moving.

-... S-Shut up. Shut up fake!

- "What, don't you understand? So you were really aware of it, but you pretended not to see it. I mean, isn't it? The Leon you and your family talk about would never choose to sacrifice his older sister. "

Louise's feelings were agitated.

It is so. Leon would never sacrifice me. And yet I've been so lonely She told herself, and attacked Arroganz again.

-Do not try to confuse me!

- "I'm sure you're already confused. Try to test if that's the real Leon. If

it's the real one, it will tell you everything you need to know. "

Louise stopped moving.

Speaking to Louise in a voice that sounded like she was worried about him was her brother, hugging her from behind.

[What's wrong with you, sister?]

Louise turned around and looked at Leon's face.

The outline was blurry and not clearly visible.

"Leon ... what do you think of Noelle?"

[What happened to you suddenly? That doesn't matter, right?]

As questions arose, one after another Louise became more and more suspicious. So he tried to answer.

"You don't remember Noelle? After all the time you were so close, you must have had a lot of fun together, right? L-Look, you two sneaked around and played, right?"

The words scared Noelle more than anything.

-Hey?

However, Anjie who saw that, closed Noelle's mouth.

"Shut your mouth ... It could be interesting."

The confused Louise uneasily asked her brother, "D-you don't remember? You and Noelle were engaged, and you were very close..."

Her brother smiled.

[Yes, it is true. But, you are the one I love the most, sister.]

Louise shook her head when she heard that line.

-You're wrong. Noelle was the one he loved the most. You said that since

Noelle was your fiancée, she was the one you loved the most, and then I, your sister, was the second ... W-Who are you? Why do you have Leon's face and voice?

Louise separated from her brother... from the impostor.

Noelle grabbed Louise's hand.

"Louise!" Come here now!

However, the fake form slowly transformed into a disastrous demonic form.

[It was just a little more ... well, it doesn't matter. I should only need to use the part of you I've obtained.]

The magical armed unit grabbed Louise with a big hand and pulled Noelle and the others out of the spirit world.

"Louise!"

Louise extended her hand to Noelle.

But their hands never touched.

As the three of them were led outside, the magical armed unit took Louise.

[Now ... I'll be able to resurrect again. If this power runs out, I'll just take the next one.]

The magical armed unit obtained the energy from Louise's crest, increasing its power even more.

Chapter 11 – Leon

The black magic armed unit began to be covered in a layer of ice.

"A-Aah, this really sucks."

What is with that guy? He can do anything.

There was a blizzard everywhere.

The surrounding landscape was covered in ice and froze you just by looking at it.

It felt like the temperature in the cabin was dropping.

[He keeps squeezing the energy out of Louise. If we keep fighting like this, Louise won't be able to last much longer.]

"Do you always use humans as disposable batteries?" That guy is the worst.

[Master, your heart rate is rising. You seem to be very angry.]

He spoke lightly, but my partner, Luxon, knows how I feel.

Yes. It's frustrating.

I couldn't help but feel uncomfortable.

"How are the three girls?"

[Tired, but recovering on Einhorn's Bridge. Negotiations in the spirit world have failed.]

"I'll save her, even if it's by force."

[After all, it couldn't be solved intelligently. It always seems to be too soft, Master.]

One leg was stuck, both arms were missing, and the weapons in the container were depleted.

... Arroganz was that fully wounded, but there were no feelings of sadness neither in Luxon, nor in me.

"We'll get serious from here."

[Next time be more serious from the beginning. Schwert, deploying.]

The magic armed unit started attacking me, but I anticipated its movement and avoided it with the least amount of movement.

-Haha! You are moving worse than before!

The magical armed unit has increased in both speed and power, but it seems that it can only make vague movements.

[Since Louise can't control it, the core must be moving it instead. A damaged core can only move like this. Here it comes again. Please continue to avoid him and hook up with Schwert.]

-Leave it to me.

The magical armed unit approached, but I avoided it and ran towards the Sacred Tree. Then I saw a big black wing passing through the trees.

This was in the shape of a fighter.

The fighter was assembled with the hands and feet, which were spare parts for Arroganz. Arroganz purged the injured parts of both arms and legs.

As the container also purged and fell, Schwert went from behind and docked with Arroganz.

"Combining is every boy's dream."

[Sorry, I'm not used to piloting giant robots.]

"Idiot, don't be sarcastic."

Arroganz exchanged his missing arms and legs for new ones, while flying around the branches of the Sacred Tree.

There, I saw the magical armed unit chasing him.

The place where he passed was frozen.

[Master, Arroganz's arms change modifies our options to combat the enemy magical armed unit.]

"It doesn't look any different to the naked eye."

[You focus a lot on that, don't you? Here it comes.]

When the magical armed unit approached, he let Arroganz catch the ice blade.

Previously, Arroganz's arms were easily cut off, but this time it was different.

The ice sheet melted.

The magic armed unit tried to break out of attack range, but I grabbed it and didn't let it go. -Do not escape. I had to chase you!

Heat transferred from both arms and the armor made of magic ice melted. **[Ahhhhh !!]**

I heard a scream mixed with metallic sounds, but I ignored it and ripped its arms off. Luxon's single red eye glowed suspiciously as he enjoyed watching.

[You have hurt me a lot. But I have collected your data. I have prepared countermeasures.]

We had prepared Schwert, who had been completely merged in a short period of time, and prepared the best moves based on the data from the battle.

We knew we were going to win.

"I'm taking her back."

I removed the armor from its chest and found Louise's figure there.

Arroganz's hand gently grasped Louise.

Once we got her back, she was ours.

[Are we finished, Master?]

-You never change.

As Arroganz walked away, the demonic armed unit tried to poke its tail.

I caught it in one hand and flew up to the treetops again, easy as that.

"You've made me spin around a lot." I'm going to destroy you without leaving a trace of dust! [Destroy the weapons of the new humans ... Impact

!!]

A red glow was generated from the hand gripping the tail that directly burned the magical armed unit.

I took the magic armed unit to the treetops and threw it away.

Since Schwert was docked at Arroganz, lasers shot out of there and ripped through it.

The magical armed unit fell on the Sacred Tree.

[Stop !!]

While Luxon was very enthusiastic about dropping it, I was about to draw Schwert's greatsword to stop him --- when suddenly a missile rained down on the magic armor.

-Eh!?

Looking up, I saw a box-shaped aircraft, larger than Luxon itself, floating

in midair.

Luxon was frustrated.

[Ideal!? Why are you getting in the way ?!]

As Luxon protested, Ideal opened a communication channel to speak to him.

[I'm here to help. I'll take care of the magic armed unit from here. More importantly, are you sure you want to leave that woman like that?]

Louise, whom Arroganz gently held in his arms, was naked.

Given the outside temperature, we couldn't leave her in that state any longer. "Luxon, let's go back."

[... It is understood.]

The truth is he's following my orders with an air of reluctant obedience, although he really doesn't want to ... he's still following my orders.

If you are an artificial intelligence, you should be able to obey orders like Ideal. However, there seems to be some parts that Luxon disagrees with.
[Ideal, I will contact you later to explain.]

[Is there a problem?]

[... Many unnatural things have happened.]

[There is some kind of misunderstanding. I get it. We will discuss it later.]

◇

Louise was dreaming.

She was lying in the shade of a tree on a nice day.

Her brother was next to her, staring at Louise's face.

Louise could see her brother's pale face and tears welled up in her eyes.

-Leon

"What is it, Sister? Did you have a nightmare?"

-Its not that. You know ... I've always wanted to apologize for a long time.

-Why?

As Louise lifted her upper body and hugged her brother, she realized she was a girl.

She realized that this was a dream, and she became sad.

"I've never been able to apologize to you. I couldn't do anything about it. You are my brother and I couldn't do anything!"

Her brother held Louise when she started crying and gently comforted her.



"You didn't have to worry about that. Besides, I'm sorry too. I was almost not on time. But you already seem to have gotten a great deal of help."

When Louise saw her brother smile, she was sure this was the real Leon.
-So is. Two more left ... wait.

-What?

"Leon, did you save me?"

When Louise looked at his face, questioning Leon's dialogue, he smiled.

She would also worry if her late brother told her he was here to help.

And most importantly, if he is her real brother.

"You came to save me, right?"

"How did I come to save you?"

This was a dream.

It couldn't be helped that it was incoherent.

Still, Louise held on and searched for the truth.

"Leon, tell me the truth."

-Oh I'm sorry. It's time to go.

After telling him so naturally, Leon got up and ran off.

When she got up to chase him, Leon was saying goodbye from afar.

"See you later, Sister!"

Leon said "See you later", turned around and ran away.

When he reached his hand behind her, Louise woke up.

◇

—Le... on... don't... go...o.

Louise woke up from her dream.

She spread her hands and her breath quickened.

"Ah, have you woken up yet?"

I was sitting in a chair near the bed and had just woken up.

I was tired and looked like I had fallen asleep while sitting.

Thanks to that, I had a strange dream.

I feel like I've had a very nostalgic dream, but it's not natural.

I think I was talking to my older sister, but I don't remember having that much fun with Jenna.

Is that what I want? Don't tell me ... am I a siscon?

I was a bit surprised.

"Huh, uh, what?"

Louise raised her upper body and looked around the room.

"You're on the aircraft I have."

Louise, who was lying on the bed in the spare room, was dressed in the clothes Anjie and the others had brought her.

I stretched out and stood up.

-Luxon has investigated, it seems that the flower has nothing to do with the Sacred Tree. He said he had a weapon attached to it called a magical armed unit.

When I briefly explained the situation, Louise looked down.

"... So it wasn't a dream."

"I'm glad you weren't euthanized."

-So you think? It doesn't change the fact that you interrupted me. If you go back, you'll be in big trouble.

She looked at me accusingly and I told her what happened.

-No problem. After all, the acting president has given me permission to do so.

Louise's eyes went wide, and then she looked stunned when she guessed.

"My father did something stupid too. Now he will be blamed by the other families. Even if the story of the Leon is true, the heads of the six noble families will not believe it. They will protest because you let the flower wither on your own.

I'm sure that even if I explained that: "That was a fake!" they wouldn't believe me. I'll have to leave that to Alberg-Sama.

-This is a problem. Do we have to flee to the kingdom for this?

I smiled as I said that, and Louise looked at me.

-What happened?

"... Why did I look at you and think you looked like my brother when I only knew him as a child? That's what intrigued me. When I look closer, he's not like you. Leon was a much more obedient and kind boy."

I looked at Louise, who had turned away and sulked, and apologized for the deception.

-Do not be mad at me. If I can't convince you, I would have to deceive you, right?

"Your methods are too dirty." Leon, you deliberately let yourself be beaten by Serge when you fought him, didn't you? It was too unnatural

now

that I think about it. You could even take me to the people who came in.

I am aware that it was an inefficient strategy.

Well, there were many things I wanted to try.

Thanks to that, we had a good opportunity.

When Louise looked back at me, her mouth complained, but she was worried. "Would you go that far?" You even coughed up blood, right? You are injured?

"Oh, that?" It is clotted blood. It is not obvious?

I showed him one of the small capsules and put it in his mouth and chewed it.

Then, it seemed like blood ... was coming out of my mouth.

Louise was pulling my cheeks.

-You are terrible. You made me worry about nothing.

-Do not be angry. It was really effective, wasn't it? Also, I don't want to be overestimated. It was a random strategy, you know? Right now I regret that I could have done better.

Actually, Ideal's defense team was on the way, and it took longer than he thought.

It would have been a lot easier if Ideal hadn't interfered.

"I wonder if Leon would have been like you when he grew up. I would not like that as an older sister. I wish you had grown up to be a better and more honest boy."

"I heard from you, Alberg and the others, but Leon was a naughty boy, right? He wouldn't have grown up a good, honest boy, would he?"

"My Leon is not like you."

She sulked again and walked away from me, so I decided to leave the room.

-I'm sorry about that. ... It's true, Louise, I just thought about the answer to your question.

-What? Maybe you have been thinking about it the whole time? You will never be right.

As I was dreaming before, one thing came to mind.

That is the question with which Louise saw through my lie.

She seemed to think she would never be right, but she had a strange confidence in me.

I received the clue in my dream, an item that I remember giving my parents in a past life.

At the time, it was a ticket to help, but in my dream, it was a "ticket to save."

"Ticket to save ... was I right? Well, I probably failed. Oh, it's almost time to go, so I'll go.

As I left the room, I saw the look of surprise on Louise's face."

Does it mean I failed? She showed a face saying "What is this guy talking about?" It would have been better if I hadn't said that.

◇

Louise couldn't move when she heard Leon's reply.

"H-How could you guess?"

The paper ring his brother gave him was a piece of paper that initially read "three tickets to save."

When Louise said that she would not forgive him, her brother rolled them up and turned it into a ring.

So even if they had known about the paper ring, no one would have known what was written inside.

Not even Serge would have known.

How long has it been?

There was a knock on the door and Noelle entered the room as Louise answered.

"Noelle."

"Louise, I need to talk to you."

-... Take a seat.

Louise also remembered what happened in the spirit world.

Now that she knew what she was hiding, it was time to talk to Noelle.

But she couldn't help but thank her.

-You saved me. Thank you.

Noelle was silent.

She exposed the facts in that spirit world.

Now Noelle knew what Louise really felt.

She has romantic feelings for her little brother, even if they are mild, and she would be upset if she found out that the reason he was stalking her was because she was the woman who took him off.

From Noelle's point of view, it's a recrimination.

Noelle got up and slapped Louise on the cheek.

... Well, that's how things turn out.

Noelle, while Louise accepted the slap indulgently, began to speak to him little by little. "I didn't know about the engagement."

"... Huh?"

"There are many things I don't remember from my childhood, but at least I didn't hear about my engagement."

Louise giggled when she found out that Noelle didn't know about Leon.

-What? So, Leon was being tricked? It really disgusts me. I wonder how far the Lespinasse family has to go to make fun of us and make us feel better.

Noelle's hand reached out and grabbed Louise's chest.

When Louise looked at Noelle's face, she was crying.

-Why are you crying?

"W-Because when we were connected I could see your memories! I didn't know you cared so much about your brother."

"It's unpleasant to see the spirits connect." Am I the only one who was spied on? Thinking that this is not a fair conversation, Noelle continued.

"I didn't expect you to be so pleased with my engagement story. I sincerely apologize for not being able to attend the funeral. So I will go visit his grave soon."

"I'm glad you did. ---I'm sorry. I lied. I don't want you near Leon's grave. Noelle giggled when she told him how honest she felt."

"After all, you look better this way, Louise."

-What?

"A foul-mouthed, sarcastic woman, that's the Louise I know." It was unpleasant when I saw you hiding behind Leon like a cat.

-What have you said!?

Louise also grabbed Noelle's chest and they stared at each other.

Noelle seemed to be having a lot of fun.

"Yes, your face!" I can't help but laugh when I think that the woman who bullied me was jealous that I thought I had taken her beloved brother from her.

"S-Say what you want!"

They grabbed hold of the hair and began to fight, clawing at each other.

"I've always hated you! How dare you bully me just because I took your brother from you !?"

"Thanks to that, the other boys didn't touch you! You should at least thank me, annoying woman!"

Pillows were thrown and hit each other ... and after a few minutes, they both lay on the bed, exhausted.

They were lying side by side, staring at the ceiling and panting.

Their hair was a mess.

Their clothes were ruined.

And probably because they said what they had to say, the conversation was more fluid than before.

Noelle seemed refreshed, letting out her previous exasperation.

"Oh ~, I said it. That felt good."

Louise didn't like it, but she was a little happier.

"You are a rude woman. I'm glad you don't have to be Leon's wife.

"And the second says so too."

"As soon as Leon met you, he would immediately have chosen me again as his number 1."

They laughed while complaining about it.



Chapter 12 - The Truth About the House of Lespinasse

A few days had passed since Leon's Sky Pirates incident.

Clement appeared at Emile's mansion.

"Miss Lelia, the Six Families have finished speaking with the Kingdom's diplomats." Clement, who served the House of Lespinasse in the past, was now a professor at the Academy. Lelia sat on the couch to listen to the report.

She looked out the window and saw that it was snowing.

-And so? How will Leon and others be judged?

Leon and the others who acted in a fight with the Republic would be brought to justice, of course.

That's what she thought, but actually Lelia's prediction was wrong.

"None of that, they have been cleared of all charges."

"W-Why !? Maybe they could have gotten the sentence reduced, but they won't sentence them after all they've done !?"

Dressed as pirates of the sky, they destroyed a Republic ship.

That alone is a serious crime.

And furthermore, they were hurting the people involved with the six noble families. "What do you mean by nothing?" That was Lelia's honest feeling.

"A diplomat from the kingdom was a great negotiator." And it seems the Raults are still working. Clement's gaze sharpened.

For the Lespinasse family, the Rault family is the enemy.

Knowing that the Raults are on the move must have bothered Clement as well.

"The Raults again?"

Are they really going to join forces with the Raults? Teaming up with the enemy is the worst thing you can do.

From Lelia's point of view, it felt like she had been betrayed.

Although they promised to protect the Sacred Tree and restore peace to the Republic, Leon and Marie joined the scoundrel Alberg.

However, Clement also had other information.

"Furthermore, the heads of the six great noble families have officially announced that this sacrificial fiasco was not the will of the Holy Tree."

-... Yes they are very honest. I heard it was different, but is it something you can believe so quickly?

The subject related to the Sacred Tree was very sensitive in the Republic.

And yet, it was hard to believe that just because Leon said, "That's a foreign object attached to the Sacred Tree."

She wondered if Clement agreed with him.

"I did not foresee this result." What if they had been persuaded by the Raults?

Lelia had no idea what was going on.

"I'll go talk to Leon and the others."

"Miss Lelia, Leon and the others are a danger now. It is very likely that they have been misled by House Rault."

"But I'll still talk to them."

Also, we have Ideal around here.

She already had a power equivalent to that of Leon and the others.

This made Lelia feel more secure.

Then Emile came back from outside and came to the room they were in.

Emile, dressed in a suit and with his coat under his arm, greeted Clement.

"Mr. Clement, it's been a long time."

"Emile, you look good too." More importantly, what is happening today?

"They called me at my parents' house." There was a problem with the Rault house. -Issue?

Lelia got up and urged a tired-looking Emile to tell her what was going on. "Emile, what was the problem with the Rault family?"

"Are you interested? I haven't heard the details yet, but for some reason, Mr. Alberg thinks Serge doesn't have the qualifications to be the head of his family."

Lelia overreacted to the story of Serge's lack of qualities.

-What is happening!?

"Calm down, Lelia." It is still a rumor. It has been suggested that Serge could be removed from office and Louise's future husband could be the next head of the family. I have a fiancee, so I just ended up listening to that conversation. I'm sure single men will approach Louise from now on.

If Serge is removed from office, then the seat to the future head of the House of Rault is waiting.

It was a great opportunity for men.

But Lelia wasn't convinced.

Why will Serge be fired? Could that be involved with Leon and the others?

◇

Winter break was almost over and the day Anjie and Livia would return had arrived.

When we got to the port, the wind was cold and unpleasant.

"Be careful, you two."

Anjie was in awe in front of me, who was about to cry.

"That's our line. You're going to have a hard time in this strange place."

Livia smiled at me, she was a little worried.

"We could be of help this time. And, Leon ... you must not fool around on us."

Hey? Are you going to say it here?

It was a misunderstanding.

Seeing the subtle look on my face, Anjie asked Luxon to keep an eye on me.

"Luxon, make sure Leon doesn't fool around on us."

[Leave it to me. If I see any signs of infidelity, I'll let you know right away.] How about any signs?

"Will you judge if I have an affair, depending on the amount of suspicion I make?"

[Yes. So please be very careful what you do.]

"... Not exactly the kind of thing an observer would say."

Livia looked at Noelle, who had come to see them off.

"Leon, can I speak to Noelle? It's an important conversation between women, so don't listen."

Should I answer yes with a smile?

I nodded repeatedly and agreed.

◇

Noelle felt very uncomfortable when she approached them.

She had a general idea of what Livia and Anjie were thinking.

I thought they didn't feel anything for me, but they are more jealous than I imagined. She felt that when she entered the spirit world to help Louise.

It was Anjie's rage and Livia's awkward jealousy.

They had a pretty face and both were very scary inside.

She tried not to look at him in the spirit world, but the emotions they had against her were horrible.

Anjie's eyes on Noelle were stern.

"I'm not going to try to fix it now. You know how we feel, right?"

Noelle nodded.

She feared that Livia's emotions were too careless.

Livia was smiling, and Anjie spoke for her.

"I feel like I'm filled with jealousy." Livia is a sweetie. I also think you're that cute, Livia.

"Anjie, Noelle is in front of us."

And Noelle looked concerned about their relationship.

These two --- if it weren't for Leon, they probably would have ended up together.

Aren't they supposed to be interested in men since they're with Leon?

The two are so attracted to each other that it seems so.

Livia gave Noelle a serious look.

"Noelle, let's talk about Leon."

"L-Like I said I am not having an affair with him. I'm moving into Marie's house soon."

"No, that doesn't matter anymore."

-Wha...?

Anjie, who would normally be furious if she messed with Leon, crossed her arms and revealed her feelings to Noelle.

"It doesn't make me feel good, but go ahead. If you can get Leon, I'd rather say go for it."

"... Wha ... what? Are you saying you don't think I can do it?"

Provoked and annoyed, Noelle spoke sharply.

"If you underestimate me too much, I'll be Leon's number 1." There are only a few months left, but they'll be in big trouble if they relax.

Livia clasped her hands and smiled.

However, her eyes were not smiling.

-Do as you like. If you think you can get Leon with that attitude, we would have no problem. Yes, really.

In the midst of that, Livia seemed a bit tired remembering something.

The same thing happened with Anjie.

"That idiot ... he was atrocious last night."

◇

It happened last night.

About to return to the kingdom the next day, Anjie and Livia visited Leon's room on their last night.

They wanted to sleep in the same bed as Leon.

Leon is also a man, and naturally he was driven by sexual desire... "W-Wait." Which one should I touch first?

The two of them pretended to be asleep and watched Leon.

Anjie, Leon has his hands on your head.

This Leon, did we get here and he's not going to touch us?

He stared for a while, but Leon stayed still.

"W-Which one should I start with?" Anjie? Livia? No, first of all, this situation is strange, right? They both trusted me to come to my room, putting my hands on top of them would be bad, right ?!

This is what Leon concluded to.

"I think it would be bad if I put a hand on them here." If that is. This does not mean that I am incompetent or something, I am a gentleman. Yes, I am a gentleman, so I will honestly go to sleep. Luxon!

When he whispered to Luxon, he handed Leon a sleep aid.

[You are truly incompetent]

-Shut up. I protected my image from the both of them. I can't sleep like this, so I'll take my sleep medicine.

[Drink fast and sleep.]

"What an agile mind."

[I knew from the beginning that this would happen. He was as incompetent as I expected him to be. I hope you get a little disappointed.]

"I'm the type of man who is never disappointed."

Just like that, Leon took the medicine and lay down on the bed to sleep.

When Anjie and Livia got up, Luxon called out to them.

[Unfortunately, Master's incompetence was not corrected by studying abroad.]

◇

Noelle heard the story and felt a little sorry for both of them.

"Leon... isn't that horrible?"

But it would be a dilemma if they appeared together.

At the same time, she wondered about Anjie and Livia's actions.

The problem was that they both did not realize that.

"You should have created a better environment."

"What will we do now Anjie?"

Noelle thought.

Why not visit the room one by one? This is going to be difficult for Leon.

It felt out of place somehow.

A young lady and a girl of pure innocence.

She could see that combination.

Anjie brought her attention back to Noelle and gave her a complex look.

"Well, it's like an impregnable castle. If you can breach it, do what you want.

-... I don't think it's normal to instigate a woman to get ahead of her fiancé. Livia laughed.

"Yes, that is true. But at that moment, when I also connected with you, we talked about it together. If anyone else could do it, it was you, Noelle."

Noelle was stunned.

"I'm not going to touch a man with a fiancee!"

But Anjie seemed to see right through her.

"Then go ahead and find another one. But I don't think it's possible when deep down, you only think of him."

Noelle regretted the mental connection she had made with them.

It's not really funny that they saw the whole thing.

Anjie said it was time to go and tried to get onto Licorn.

"Well, I was joking about conquering Leon. You have to find your own way. But don't forget it."

Noelle looked down with her hands in her pockets.

-I know. There are a lot of people who want me, right?

-Yes. If you come to the kingdom, we can help you. But not anywhere else.

Livia was also worried about Noelle.

"If you need anything, you can count on Leon. He's too reckless, but I'm sure he can help you."

Noelle, who had already been helped many times, smiled.

-I know.

Once the two of them made their way over to where Leon was, they boarded Licorn.



Anjie and Livia had returned to the kingdom.

And when I got back to the mansion, I saw Marie crying at the door.

"They don't really mature, do they?"

I was surprised, but now Marie is bawling since quite some ago. She was shedding tears.

-Its not true! I don't believe it!

It was Jilk who was dismayed to see Marie.

"Try to control yourself, Marie."

However, right beside Jilk and Marie... there was a pile of antiques that did not sell. Marie looked up and yelled at Jilk.

"Don't say thaaaaaaaat!"

-I'm sorry!

I saw a pile of antiques... or a pile of junk that looked real, but was all fake. Luxon looked at them and was impressed.

[Everything is fake. I'm surprised that so far you can only collect fakes.

The Master must have spent a lot of money to collect them, but with all these purchases, it would be nice to have one or two real antiques.]

Yes, they are all well made fakes.

Jilk had an excuse, and said that they were all a masterpiece.

"While choosing my merchandise, I couldn't help but imagine Marie's face and I couldn't help but choose what to sell to others."

If he chose seriously for Marie's sake, all that would come out were well-made fakes. I wonder what Marie would think if she said that.

"You damn fool! What is that? You're saying that these fake things are

suitable for a woman like me, right? You, I already told you before, right?

You can send something that the person will be happy with! Hey, what's the point in giving me falsehoods to make me happy as a cheap woman ?!"

Jilk couldn't find an answer when Marie got up and grabbed him by the neck. I was laughing with Luxon.

This was more because Marie herself is a fake saint.

[Master, I can hear you. But even so, if you only take fake products like this, you will feel that kind of intention. Was it deliberate?]

Marie burst into tears again.

-What will we do!? I have spent all my money. How am I going to live now? I thought it was okay for Jilk to take all the money! I was going to keep half of the winninggggsssss !!

This garbage ... no, Jilk had apparently taken all the money on his own.

He is still the same as rubbish.

The problem is with Marie.

Surprisingly, Marie did not like to gamble, but in this case she thought it was a good deal and invested in it.

To those around her, however, it seems like a gamble.

"You have what you deserve."

[Why don't you learn to manage your money?]

Marie looked up and held onto my leg.

-I need help. I just need money to live for the next three months!

-Do not bother! It's your fault for spending so much money.

"I didn't think this would happen! Also, I didn't think this guy was going to take all my money!" As he made a noise at the front door, the five idiots, plus Jilk, came out.

"Marie, what is happening !?

When Julian, on behalf of the group, asked what was going on, the four of them looked at the scrap heap, followed by a cold glance at Jilk.

Julian responded as if he were going to spit.

"I'm ashamed to be your brother."

Brad also adjusted his bangs and said a few harsh words.

"I didn't think this guy had an eye for this from the start."

Greg spat a few words too.

"I won't let you make Marie cry."

Chris's glasses were glowing suspiciously.

-Human waste.

Jilk was dragged by the four idiots to the backyard of the mansion.

Marie looked up at the sky.

-Hahaha! Now I am free from the simple life, and it is the beginning of a life of poverty again! It was a short dream!

She had a tight smile with the pupils of her eyes losing their shine.

It was a tough sight to see.

Then Cara appeared.

"Marie-sama, don't worry."

-But it was expensive?

"I've been saving my money. It's not much, but I thought we could survive a month with this."

When Cara handed her the money, Marie was desperately trying to take advantage of it. I struggle to keep her extended right hand in place with my left.

"T-That's your money, Cara, so take it back."

-But!

-I said no! Hurry while I keep my sanity ... I won't be able to keep it for long. Please Cara ... Keep that money away from me. Don't make me see it.

"Marieeee-samaaaaaaaa!"

It's like watching a sad scene of a person about to turn into a zombie saying to their friends, "Stop me! I don't want to attack them. Kill me while I'm still human!"

No, it's actually different. Completely different.

A little later, Noelle returned to the mansion.

She was carrying a shopping bag in her hand, so she appears to have been shopping on the way home.

-I'm here! What happened to Marie and the others? And what is that pile of antiques? "Oh, this?" Actually...

I told Noelle what happened.

Then Noelle, understanding the situation, gave Marie an understanding look.

"Marie, I can give you some money." When I became the priestess, I got some money to live on. I'm in your debt and I can pay your rent or something.

Noelle's suggestion had made Marie cry.

"Rent ... what a precious word."

Precious? I don't understand Marie's values.

"You and I get along well. You can count on me without fail."

"Thank you, Noelleeeeeeee!"

I started to think when I saw Marie hugging Noelle.

Ah, this will be a problem if I do not lend you money.

◇

"I gave her that much money for summer vacation, but she melted brilliantly." It was night.

I was talking to Luxon about today's events in my room.

In the end, he remembered that I would loan Marie three months of living expenses. As it was, Cara was going to give all her money to Marie.

If Marie is the only one suffering, I can leave her alone, but I have no choice. I really had no choice but to lend her money.

And Noelle ...

I had a feeling that if the loan of money kept happening between Marie and Noelle, it would eventually become a problem, so I stopped her.

Because money problems are a terrible thing.

Friendship or not, that's easy to destroy.

I feel sorry for Marie's few friends, and I feel sorry for her for reducing them further. Because there are more bastards to feed than friends.

I'm starting to feel a little sorry for her.

You may feel a little sorry for Marie for having to take care of five such

idiots. But I was laughing because it was fun to watch.

[You really have a soft spot for Marie, don't you, Master?]

"It's not that easy. I hate her. But don't you think I can feel a little sympathy for her? You will continue to feed waste like Jilk."

[As a third party, don't you look like you're somewhat picky?]

"What do you mean, I'm a little fussy about my little sister?"

I do not know what that means. Is it a made up word or something?

Do you think a younger sister is a bit of a target?

I do not get it.

[On the other hand, can I make a report of my findings?]

-... How did it go?

After the jokes, I decided to listen to Luxon's report.

There were many questions this time.

[Now, I would like to talk about the decisions of the six families that have upset you. The fact is that they so readily accepted our reports.]

"That is a real mystery to me." Alberg-Sama made a move, but there was no resistance at all. Only the Faiviel resisted, right?

[Yes. Regarding that, it seems that the heads of the six great noble families knew that the Sacred Tree could be manipulated by a third party.]

-They knew it?

[I heard that there was a house that did such research in the past. It no longer exists.] "What do you mean?"

I have a bad feeling about this. I hate when this happens as my intuition

is always correct.

"The one who has been investigating the use of the Sacred Tree is the Lespinasse family."

-You're lying. Is this a case where the Lespinasse family were working behind the scenes?

[That is not possible.]

-It is not?

But there are more things that I did not understand.

[The House of Lespinasse, in the days when they called themselves the Seven Great Nobles, was the representative house of the Republic.]

Was this house researching how to manipulate the Sacred Tree that is considered sacred in the Republic?

[I don't know the details of the situation, but I can deduce it up to a point. I have been told that, thanks to this, our claims were accepted without problems. Of course, we couldn't have done it without Alberg's cooperation.]

"Maybe I should bring him some candy to thank him tomorrow? ... So what are you thinking?"

Gathering the information Luxon has been collecting, I had a bad feeling about this.

Alberg-Sama, who is supposed to be the last boss, is a nice guy, and Louise, the villain, is actually a nice person.

To make matters worse, there was the Lespinasse family who were making strange moves behind the scenes.

It was a huge difference from the setting of this second Otome game.

[I guess from Marie and Lelia's stories, this story was wrong from the

beginning.]

-The beginning?

[You said it would start with the first scene of the destruction of the House of Lespinasse.]

-Yes. The Raults destroyed it and the main character, Noelle, saw the mansion on fire ... and they both said that's how it started.

And Luxon had previously said that was the problem.

It was impossible for the Lespinasse family, who had a higher blessing, to lose to the Rault family, who had only a lower blessing.

In fact, the blessings given by the Sacred Tree are classified.

Even if the lower ranks go against the higher ranks, they cannot win.

[After hearing Louise's story as well, I made a prediction. Didn't the Lespinasse family lose the blessing of the Sacred Tree long ago? That's why he didn't even attend the funeral of the Rault heir.]

-Why? They could at least show themselves ... No, wait. There is something here. Was it a rule for a great person to wear their crest?

[Yes. At ceremonies and so forth, it was customary for the highest ranking person to display his crest to those around him.]

Such a thing existed in the rules of the Republic.

"Does that mean that the Lespinasse family, Noelle's parents, couldn't show their faces without showing off their crests?"

[They studied to bring the Holy Tree under control and were stripped of its blessing, perhaps because the tree was angry. That makes sense. I also believe that the six great nobles who were angry at this forgave the Rault family that destroyed the Lespinasse family.]

"Suddenly the premise was broken. In other words, the first one to do

bad things was..."

[Probably the Lespinasse family. But only from the perspective of the Republic.]

—Of the Republic?

[It is not clear what they were thinking when trying to control the Sacred Tree. What if I explained to Master in plain language that they were actually trying to save the world from a crisis?]

"That sounds like justice for the Lespinasse family."

[I'm afraid there are some facts that are not discussed in the game.]

We don't need that kind of setting!

Why isn't it a fluffier setting?

There is evil and there is justice, it can be as simple as that, right?

No wait. It's a fluffy setting, so is it such a terrible world?

It's just that no matter how much you think about it, it's useless.

Because I'm not that smart!

"What do you think would happen if I told this story to Lelia?"

[She won't believe it? You distrust Lelia.]

"Won't she be more than me? You are a dangerous artificial intelligence who doesn't even think of his master as a master and says he will destroy everything in the blink of an eye. I would suspect it too."

[You are a small degree of Master to ignore and doubt everything I have done so far.]

"I don't need a great title. For an average man, a moderate amount is sufficient. Well, let's stop talking about stupid things."

"So can you get along with Ideal?"

[... I do not think so.]

Epilogue

It was a day before classes started again.

He was visiting the Rault castle.

I wanted to thank Alberg-Sama for everything and to know more about their situation.

"You went to the trouble of bringing me a box of candy."

"It's like an apology for all the trouble I've caused you."

"An apology, huh? ... you actually saved me so don't worry."

This is how I began to hear the latest news while speaking softly.

"Rumors are circulating that Serge is going to be fired. It is true?"

"I can't say it's a silly rumor."

-Are you serious?

Alberg-Sama thought Serge hated them for this one incident.

"I think I've been treating Serge like a son, but I think it's been a burden to him. If that boy wants to be an adventurer, I'm willing to let him pursue that dream."

"If you don't like him then do you dismiss him?"

"We accept him as an adopted child and we are responsible for him.

That child is, and will continue to be, part of our family. Although Louise will never accept it.

Observing their interactions in the large airship, it seems impossible to do something about it. How is it possible that they hate each other so

much?

"Leon, you must see Louise. She is shy, but wants to see you."

At the request of Alberg-Sama, I went to see Louise.

◇

When I met with Louise, she was embarrassed.

More importantly, she had some scratches on the side of her face.

I heard she had a fight with Noelle, but it seems like they overdid it a bit.

"Don't look at me too much. It's embarrassing."

She seemed less concerned about the abomination she displayed in the sacrifice fiasco than about being seen hurt.

"I'm relieved to see you're in a good mood."

"I've caused you a lot of trouble."

-Do not worry about it.

Marie has caused me so much more trouble, so Louise's still small when you think about it. She seemed to want to ask me something.

-What's going on?

"Leon ... Hey, the answer to the question I asked you that time, how did you know?"

"The answer to your question?"

-Look! You guessed it was a save ticket when we were aboard Einhorn!

I thought you'd never guess. How did you know about it!? It's something only a child would think.

"A man is always a child at heart."

It is incredible that it is a coincidence.

"Don't lie! ... Hey, Leon... you're not really my brother, are you?"

I suppose you wish it were so, but your Leon and I were almost born at the same time. It makes no sense that I am his reincarnation.

If he died and reincarnated once, he would be less than ten years old.

"No, I am not."

"Yes, of course not. I'm sorry. I do not know what is happening to me."

"I just look like him. I'm not your brother, Louise. I'm sorry I tricked you at the time." When I lowered my head, Louise had a complex look on her face.

"Just don't do that to me again."

"I wouldn't really like to do that either." I'm tired of pretending to be someone else. I had to get information from Louise and Alberg-Sama to pretend to be Leon. I felt like a villain.

It was really heartbreaking.

-... Hey, just for once. Can I hug you?

"It will be a pleasure to be hugged by a beautiful woman!" Yes, please.

Wow ~ I did it ~! ... I was happy to show it to her, but Louise is looking at Leon, not at me. She wants to hug her brother, and she doesn't look at me personally.

When Louise hugged me, she was crying.

-I'm sorry. I'm sorry. I'm really sorry.

Right now, I was about to call her Onee-chan... but then I stopped.

I thought it would ruin the mood if I said so, so I stopped just for her to hold onto on my body.

But it's just that.

It's a good thing, I think.

I could feel Louise's gentle touch, but I tried my best not to look sloppy and held back.

"Leon, I'm sorry." Your sister is sorry for having caused so much trouble ... Thinking about that, seeing Louise really apologize ... I regretted it.

It made me remember that I am a lustful and shameful person at a time like this. Oh my heart aches.

But when I looked out the window ... I saw Luxon.

His red lens was looking at me.

I couldn't stop Louise crying, and I think I had a tight expression on my face, because I was too afraid to speak.

Luxon saw me and sent me a message so that only I can hear it.

[You are hopeless, Master, but I didn't think you would cheat in a short period of time. But I guess my prediction was wrong. Sorry, Master.]

Wait. Please wait!

◇

Livia gazed out at the landscape as the kingdom engulfed in flames.

The royal capital had been turned to rubble and the area was on fire.

The fallen did not move.

-...What is this?

Livia was stunned at the sight.

Large aircraft were floating in the night sky.

They were the drones that Luxon often used to destroy the royal capital.

Machines that ruthlessly repeated their destructive actions.

Livia found it a very terrifying sight.

As she shuddered, she heard a voice.

"Your Highness Julian!"

She heard a voice that sounded familiar, it was Julian, who suffered under the rubble of the tiles.

She ran up to him and tried to help him, but Julian was acting strange.

" Livia, run!"

-Hey?

Why are you calling me by my nickname?

Also, Julian's atmosphere seemed somewhat different.

"U-Uhm."

"Luxon has betrayed us! H-He brought his companions ...!"

Julian, spitting blood from his mouth, couldn't speak anymore.

Luxon betrayed them --- Hearing it, Livia shook her head, saying it was impossible.

-Lie. That is not possible. Because, Luc ...

It happened then.

She felt someone staring at her and turned to see Luxon there.

He was dragging a large number of drones with him, and some of them threw something in front of Livia. What fell in front of Livia, was Jilk and the other four.

"W-why?"

Looking at all four, it was easy to imagine that they were already dead.

Livia asked Luxon, scared.

"Did you do this, Luc?"

There was also something different here.

Luxon's reaction was different than usual.

His voice was cold and he seemed to be a different person, even if it was the same voice.

[Luc? Is that my nickname? What do you think you are doing by calling me with a nickname? On that, do you want me to answer your question? -

--

I did. They, the royal capital - and this country will perish today.]

"W-why? Why would you do that!? Leon will never forgive you for this. Leon will be angry --- and sad."

If Luxon did this, there was no way Leon would stay still.

And yet Luxon ...

["Leon"? There must have been some students of the same name among the students at the academy, but it should have nothing to do with you and me. Or are you confused?]

----Why? It's Leon. Leon Fou Baltfault! He is your Master, Luc!

[I can't find a match. Who is that?]

--- Even when he heard Leon's name, his reaction was boring.

On the contrary, he said something incredible to Livia.

[My Master is you. No, I need to correct that. "It was you".]

Luxon, reformulating in past tense, continued.

[You have been a great help. So let me show you the moment when the world of the new humanity is destroyed. Will you be happy with it? After all, it is the future you wanted.]

-What are you talking about?

He couldn't believe she wanted that view.

It looked like --- hell.

[Now you regret it? A saint who has caused so much pain and suffering --- no, she sounds more like a witch.]

"D-Did I hurt a lot of people? And who?"

[You were the one who toppled and led Anjelica to her death. Many other humans have also died for you.]

"N-It can't be." I can't believe I killed Anjie.

[Really, what happened to him?]

Livia held her head.

What the hell is going on?

I do not know. I do not get it.

[She's confused, isn't she? --- It was her wish to destroy this country.

That I have fulfilled. So, now is the time to fulfill what you wanted.]

Livia shook her head.

-No. I am not Luc's Master. Your master is Leon. And, there is no way you can do this.

[You are saying something selfish. I always wanted --- to destroy you, the new humanity!] Then --- Ideal appeared.

[Luxon, how long do you want me to wait?]

[What's up, Ideal?]

[It's taking too long. We are way behind our original plan.]

[I think I made you wait too long.]

[Let's hurry. Our goal is almost complete. We will return this world --- to the way it belongs.]

Ideal and his seemingly close companion Luxon headed for the sky.

Livia stopped Luxon.

-Wait. Wait, Luc! This is not OK! There's no way Leon will approve of this! Luxon reacted to Leon's name, but then he left.

Looking at the sky, several huge airships were floating there.

They attacked the royal city and destroyed everything.

Livia was terrified by the appearance of that sight.

◇

"Luc, wait!"

Livia jumped up and had a racing pulse.

She was out of breath and sweating.

Looking to her side, Anjie was resting quietly.

She thought it had all been a dream, so she felt relieved and caressed her chest. However, it was too real to be a dream.

It was so realistic that it was as if she had actually experienced it.

"Do I want a future like this?" ---That's impossible.

However, when he saw Luxon bringing the world down together with

Ideal, she thought somewhere that something like that might be possible.

"That was a dream." So I shouldn't worry about that.

Livia was telling herself.

◇

Republic of Alzer.

At Emile's mansion, Lelia was preparing her dress.

She changed into her uniform and had complained since the morning.

"After all, I couldn't talk to Leon and everyone else."

[It can't be helped. It is also convenient there.]

"They don't speak of anything good!"

This side should be more important

Despite having to talk about the future of the Republic, both Leon and Marie were busy before the new semester.

Thanks to that, she didn't have a chance to talk to any of them.

Lelia asked Ideal while checking the contents of her purse.

"Beyond that, did you manage to find Serge's whereabouts?"

[I am currently looking into it. Apparently, he's hiding ---]

"Haa !? You said you would find it immediately!"

[Sorry]

Lelia continued to adopt a tough attitude towards Ideal's incompetence.

"You are more useless than I thought. You said you would find it immediately. Liar. Then Ideal's voice, who had been keeping a low profile until then, changed."

[--- Correct that]

-What thing?

[Correct the word liar]

"Ah?" A liar is a liar.

[Please correct that. I'm not a liar. I ask for a correction.]

Facing Ideal's atmosphere, which was different than usual, Lelia thought this was bad and apologized.

"O-Okay. I was only worried about Serge."

[--- No, I also showed a rude attitude. I'll search right away, so please give me a little more time.]

"H-Hurry up."

[--- Understood.]

◇

While Lelia headed to the academy, Ideal came to an unused warehouse.

There was Serge, who had a very pretty appearance.

[How are you today, Serge-Sama?]

Ideal already knew where Serge was.

----Of the worst. What about the boys?

[If you're talking about the people from the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, they'll be arriving soon.]

Ideal said that, then the warehouse blinds were opened and men in suits arrived.

They were people from the Holy Kingdom of Rachelle, who had hostility towards the kingdom of Holfault.

'It's been a while, Serge.

----It is so..

Serge stood up and discussed the future with them.

A man in a suit shook Serge's hand.

"That Foreign Knight of the Realm is very skilled. We are in serious trouble with that young man. It is a source of anxiety for the future."

"Enough of the talk. Do you lend me your strength or not? --- Be clear."

The man in the suit shrugged.

"If Serge becomes the owner of Rault House, can he also offer a reward to Rachelle in exchange?"

Serge nodded.

-As you like.

"I was relieved to hear that. Let's protect the Republic from the demonic hands of the Foreign Knight!"

To Rachelle's population, Leon was a troublesome kingdom-born hero.

So he didn't hesitate to team up with Serge to defeat Leon.

Serge's target was also Leon.

—Ideal — Prepare my armor. It is a special order. Like that guy riding Arroganz, prepare an armor that has no match.

Everything was to win against Leon.

To get revenge on Leon who didn't get beat up like he should.

Ideal nodded.

[We will prepare the best aircraft]

◇

On the night of that day.

Luxon and Ideal faced each other in an unpopular place.

[I asked for an explanation]

[An explanation? About what?]

Ideal was towards the mysterious while Luxon asked for an explanation.

[On the case of Louise's sacrifice. Ideal, you were against this, right? I found the trace that you helped Serge, saying that you would not supply the forces.]

Ideal apologizes.

[It was inevitable when Serge-Sama ordered it. Instead, I stopped by to help. We do not send drones as a force.]

[Why did you interfere in our way?]

[Because I believed that you could solve that difficulty by yourself.]

Luxon was suspicious of Ideal.

Ideal felt that too and asked Luxon.

[Luxon --- Do you think this world is correct?]

[What do you mean by correct?]

[No, it's okay for now. I apologize for the interference. But they weren't supposed to fight hard to that point.]

We certainly fought hard to rescue Louise.

If it wasn't for that, they wouldn't have gotten involved in this matter in the first place.

[I would like you to let me know in advance next time.]

[--- Yes, I will.]

[Then, now I will return.]

Ideal stopped Luxon as he was leaving.

[Ah, Luxon]

[What?]

[Luxon --- Are you willing to work with me?]

Ideal invited Luxon to make him his partner.

Extra Story - Aaron-chan

Clare was upset when she was sent back to the kingdom.

[What's wrong !? Idiot Master!]

Being sent back was annoying, but she still had to get the job done.

That is the job of an artificial intelligence.

After taking care of her day job, Clare was now free to do whatever. [

Well ... Let's de-stress!]

First she was an artificial intelligence in a research lab, and Clare liked doing research and things like that.

Not that she doesn't like being an artificial intelligence, but she feels good when she does this.

[Well this time ... Oh? I see you've made a move, Aaron- "chan."]

Not long ago, Aaron, a rebellious boy, tried to get hold of Livia.

He had had a lot of trouble with Clare.

In the surveillance camera footage that Clare had posted at the school, Aaron, hugging a paper bag, walked back to his room while worrying that no one would see him.

[Oh dear ~. This is a sign that you are doing something wrong.]

Watching with interest, Aaron was in his room looking at the clothes he had pulled out of the paper bag.

A security camera captured the audio.

- [I-I bought it. I-I finally got here.]

Aaron had previously combed his hair and carried it back.

His uniform was also with the shirt half open, giving him the appearance of a bad boy.

But now it was different.

He took good care of his hair and skin, and even had a hair treatment.

He used to exercise to build muscles, but now he was focusing on flexibility exercises to make his body slimmer.

His body was slimmer than before and his hair was shinier.

His skin was cleaner and the students said they were no longer afraid of his attitude.

But Clare knew why.

[Ooh! We are finally there! You are really fun to watch, Aaron-chan.

You just need a little push and people will discover your new you.]

Aaron could be seen changing his clothes for the camera.

The clothes he bought were women's clothes.

Aaron, standing in front of the mirror, looked at himself in women's clothing.

If a third party were to look at it, they might be able to see something at the level of a woman.

However, when the viewer sees him, he immediately realizes that he is a man. Aaron was nodding.

-[No. What I'm trying to achieve... what I'm trying to achieve is a more feminine appearance.]

Aaron had become a transvestite.

Aaron, who had been chasing girls, had become a boy in search of beauty.

Unhappy with his appearance, Aaron was thinking about how he could become more beautiful.

- [I've tried everything I can to make myself more beautiful. But it is still not enough. In that case, should I go to a beauty salon?]

Seeing Aaron's figure like this, Clare rolled around.

[Waa! This thing is going in so many different directions! But I understand and I will support you! Yes!]

Clare wanted to see how far Aaron would go in her spare time.

[Keep entertaining me, Aaron-chan.]

Clare's lens glowed suspiciously.

Aaron didn't know, but Clare was looking at her reflection in the mirror.

Afterword

"The World of Otome Games is Tough for Mobs" Volume 6 is finally on sale!

Thanks to you, readers, who have purchased this book. Thank you!

Now, I always wonder what I am going to write about in the epilogue, but this time I would like to inform you of valuable information for readers who purchased Volume 6.

They will have to use the barcode or URL found on the book strip or at the end of the

book to go to the survey page.

If you fill out the survey here, you will be able to read the special story I have written for you.

Normally it would be a few thousand words, but for this job, the total amount of the

The title "The Marie Route" is more than 100,000 words than volume three. That's a lot

more than one book! It is a very good benefit.

The sixth volume special is also on the Marie route, and this time we have a

recently written volume that does not appear to be a benefit of the survey.

I hope you enjoy.

The explanation of the Marie route brings us to the point of the book version of Volume 1.

There, the story begins with a "What if Leon had met Marie before he met Julian and the others ...? "

It's a story that could have been, with Leon and Marie cooperating with each other from the start.

Also, there are some stories in this book that were not mentioned in the web version and in the

book version, so I think readers who have read both the web and the web version

book will also enjoy them.

You can also enjoy the original position of Livia, Anjie and the others, so make sure

to fill out the survey to get your new bonus.

I hope to hear from you in the survey.

See you in the next volume.

Short Story – Marie Route The Fourth

"Now the kingdom is facing its greatest crisis ever!"

It was His Royal Highness Julius who was standing on a platform in the square in front of the school gates, giving a speech.

After school.

Students returning to their dormitories and those about to go out into

the city to play stop and listen to His Highness Julius' speech.

The reason is because they're obligated to hear him out. That's the reason most of them are here.

However, some of them are joining in with great enthusiasm.

His Highness Julius added gestures and raised his voice as he looked around at the faces of the crowd. 'You're used to making speeches,' is how I

—Leon Fou Bartford—felt.

"I'm sure everyone has heard of the continuing rebellion in many places. I'm sure everyone is anxious, but don't worry. The army of our Holfort Kingdom is on its way to put them down."

Even though sophomore year is nearing its end, the military is dealing with a series of rebellion's in various parts of the Holfort Kingdom.

It's not uncommon for the nobles to have skirmishes within the country.

So normally the students don't panic as long as their own safety was not in danger.

However—if it happened frequently in different parts of the country, they would become uneasy, even if they didn't want to.

In fact, the female students listening to His Highness Julius's speech seemed anxious.

"There was an uprising near my parents' home, too."

"There are many of them these days."

"I got a letter from my parent's telling me to stay in Kings Landing for the long weekend"

Many students felt uneasy.

His Royal Highness Julius' speech in such a situation attracted the

students.

"Our country is strong! Don't be afraid of the frequent uprisings! But
—"

Julius closed his eyes and made a little pause.

His eyes widen and he says in a louder voice than before

"—There's a country that's working behind the scenes."

As the crowd began to buzz, His Highness Julius just shut his mouth.

In the midst of the commotion, Marie Fou Lovan, who was next to me, looked at His Highness Julius, stunned.

"Hey, are you okay?"

When I called out to her, Marie had a huff and puff look on her face. I'm sure Marie remembers this scene. Of course, I remember it too.

Towards the end of the middle of that otome game, the real enemy is revealed. At that point, His Royal Highness Julius will make a speech.

When the crowd is quiet, His Highness Julius resumes his speech.

'The Principality—the Principality of Fanoss—is behind the frequent rebellions.

The spectators were amazed at the new revelation and shouted.

The fact that behind the uprising commotion is the Principality, which has a longstanding hostile relationship with the Holfort Kingdom, is highly credible.

Amidst the commotion, I talk with Marie. To confirm our knowledge of the game and to see what we're going to do.

"The Principality didn't stop, did it?"

"Why won't they stop? You stole their trump card, didn't you? And yet, what's the point of not stopping the war?"

I'm not going to fight because I don't think I can win. This type of decision seems simple, but it's actually quite difficult.

We were naive in thinking that we could avoid a war by capturing the magic flute, the Principality's trump card.

Last time, in order to avoid the war, we rode into the Principality of Fanoss and retrieved the Magic Flute. It's a tool that summons that otome game's last boss, and it's an extremely troublesome item.

Without the flute, we thought the war would end. But in the end, we couldn't avoid it.

"Leon, are you going to join the war?"

Marie also knows what happens after this.

What awaits after this—

"Everyone, do me a favor."

—When His Highness Julius held out his hands, he looked divine and radiant.

After all, a good-looking man is always popular. I'm sure no one would listen to me if I were to make a speech.

"This crisis—I want to stop this crisis in the Kingdom. Not as the crown prince. I want to save the kingdom from danger, as Julius, as a knight!"

That's what I'm asking for. Please lend me your help!"

The Crown Prince, as a knight, said he wants to save the day.

The students were impressed by that.

There are voices calling out his name from everywhere.

"Long live His Highness Julius!"

"Long live the kingdom!"

"I can help you!"

Gradually the crowd became invaded by the heat and raised their voices.

"Thank you. Thank you guys! Lend me your power and I will survive this crisis. I—No, we will save the country!"

Julius raised his voice at one point, and the crowd responded with a voice that made the air shake. My ears were aching.

Marie looked at it in horror. It seemed hard to understand.

"Why do you want to go to war?"

It was a scene that had been talked about like a beautiful story in that maiden game, but up close and personal, it seemed to be a different scene somehow. There was no emotion there.

It was just scary.

I wonder if Marie is the same, and she squeezes my hand.

"You don't think you're going to die, do you? Well, the aristocrats are the ones who stand back and give orders on the battlefield. They don't have much of a sense of urgency."

"And you?"

"Me? I hate it. If I don't have to fight a war, I won't."

Marie had a look of relief on her face. Did she think I would be willing to join in? In the first place, student soldiers would be a nuisance to professional soldiers and knights.

They wouldn't want to be seen on the battlefield when they hadn't even trained well.

His Highness Julius waved his hand at the enthusiastic crowd.

It was a scene that was quite exciting in the game, but seeing it in person made me feel somewhat empty, sad, and complicated.

Are these guys really going to join the war?

◇

After a few days had passed since His Highness Julius' speech, the atmosphere in the school had changed drastically.

The tense air that had been tense due to the rebellion was now buoyed by the heat.

The boys who wanted to take this opportunity to make a name for themselves had announced in high spirits in the classroom that they would be volunteering for His Highness Julius' army.

"Alan, the son of the Viscount Bourdons, volunteers for the army of His Highness Julius! Anyone else want to join me?"

If they joined with a bunch of people, they would be better remembered by His Highness Julius. This was their ulterior motive.

Also, if you volunteer with a large number of people, you in the army of His Highness Julius—shall we call it a volunteer army? It would have been a volunteer army in that otome game.

Your position in the volunteer army is also taken into account.

If you join alone, you're one of the soldiers, but if you take ten men with you, you're a captain.

Also, rumor has it that if you send out armor and airships with the support of your parents' family, you will be treated as an officer.

Lots of boy's want to join for their future.

One after another, boys from the advanced and normal classes had

volunteered to join.

I was surrounded by Daniel and Raymond, who were also poor aristocrats from the countryside, watching the scene from a distance.

Both of them were looking coldly at me.

It's kind of sad that the country aristocrats are more aware of the reality of the situation.

Daniel let out a sigh as he looked at the boys who were floating around.

"For the sake of the country, for the sake of your highness, their tatemae are splendid, aren't they?"

Raymond pushes his glasses up with his middle finger and when he adjusts his position, he talks about the boys' true feelings.

"If you're active here, you'll be popular with the girls. There are a lot of boys who will stick around for this reason."

What a sad reality.

I saw a boy named Alan making a scene in the classroom. He's a boy who wears ornaments and looks like a rich man. He is surrounded by his cronies.

I'm sure he's going to put on a fine airship and armor with the support of his parents' family.

Are the students, whose families are poor, going to borrow weapons from Alan to fight in the war? Well, that's not our problem.

"Daniel, Raymond, do you guys want to join in?"

I joked, and they both snickered.

"No,"

"Let's get real. It's not good for amateurs to be on the battlefield. I think the only one of us who's allowed to participate properly is Leon."

"Me?"

Raymond, who made it sound like I'm the only exception, shrugged his shoulders and explained why.

"It was Leon who broke off the two families of Viscount Raffan and Count Offley, right?"

"Oh~ that was my brother. Nix is a really great guy. You guys were watching him, weren't you? You guys were in on it, too."

Yeah, right. Leon was the one working in the background. I mean, we were the ones sending out the airships.

Let's just say that I'm only here to support my brother in making a name for himself. I didn't sacrifice my brother because I didn't want to stand out.

I'm a kind brother who's happy to see my brother get ahead. —No offense.

Daniel laughed.

"I envy the Baldfart family because they are all heroes. But you've made a name for yourself by attacking dungeons. You even have an airship; a lot of students know that."

Will they be pressing me to join them?

It's really annoying.

"I wish I could run away."

"I'm not sure they want you. The rich people want to play an active role themselves. They don't want Leon to take all the credit, do they?"

"You think they care more about taking credit for the war than winning it?"

"It's too good a volunteer army."

"People dream too much, don't they?"

If you play an active role on the battlefield and come back to the school, the girls won't leave you alone—what a dream! Besides, if you play an active role here, your future will be open.

His Highness Julius will remember you better, and you'll be able to tell the saga of your activities since your school days.

They don't have to push themselves. Seeing the boys trying to go to war makes me feel empty.

Let the adults take care of it. When we grow up, they can make us participate in the war even if we don't want to, but what are we going to do about it right now?

We should have more fun while we are young.

We should not go to war.

◇

A special building has been prepared on the school grounds.

It is a house, not a dormitory, prepared for Olivia. It was prepared for her, and only a few people are allowed to enter.

Armed guards were prepared around the building, and Olivia received special treatment.

But right now, the master is absent.

The people using such a building were the nobles who represented the school.

Julius has a map in front of him that is placed on the table. Several pieces that resembled airships were placed and looked at them.

At Julius's side, Jilk is preparing a cup of tea.

"Your Highness, is there something troubling you?"

Julius responds to Jilk's question by rubbing his fingers over his eyes.

Julius's problem is that there are too many volunteers.

"Lots of students volunteered, but the problem is the equipment."

"Is it still difficult to rent it from the royal court?"

"Father and Mother only told me to stay at the school. I can't believe that the King is looking at me with his finger in his mouth during this time of crisis."

One by one, the rebels rose up, and even the Principality took advantage of the opportunity to attack.

In this time of crisis, Julius has decided to fight on his own.

The reason for this—Olivia.

Jilk laughed as if teasing Julius.

"Aren't you just trying to show Olivia-san your good side?"

Don't be a fool!

Julius, who was flustered, forced himself to return the conversation with a deliberate coughing fit, but that just proved Jilks' point.

"Jilk, we're short on weapons. What about the other three?

"They're still gathering their strength back at home."

The other three are Brad, the heir to the Field family.

Greg, the heir to the Seberg family.

Chris, the son of a swordsman.

All three of them are heirs to powerful nobles and are strong allies who agree with Julius. At the same time, they were also love rivals for Olivia.

Julius puts his hand on his chin and looks down at the map. Then he tells Jilk his decision.

"We will participate in this battle, and we will lead the kingdom to victory."

"Yes, Your Highness."

Jilk agreed. He then suggested to Julius.

"Your Highness, why don't you ask the students who own airships to help you?"

"Own an airship? Are there any students who do?"

"There are very few, but they exist. With their help, we can assemble a fleet of airships. Some of the students have armor, you know"

"Would it be better to have their help now?"

"Yes. After all, this is a matter of national importance."

"All right. You're in charge. But don't push yourself."

"You can count on me, Your Highness."

◇

"Hey, poor man! I've heard you don't plan to join His Highness Julius's volunteer army,"

Alan, with his cronies, is talking to us in the classroom.

I'm surrounded by Marie, Daniel, and Raymond.

Marie raises one eyebrow.

"What? Too bad you're poor? You posh boy!"

"No, no, not you."

Alan can't come out strong against Marie, who is a girl. Just looking at her makes boys feel a sense of intimacy.

Because of Alan's shouting in the classroom, the students around us were paying attention to us.

Raymond seemed to think it was a bad idea.

"Guys, let's get out of the classroom. This situation is bad."

As if to interrupt Raymond's thoughts, Alan used his cronies to block our escape route.

"You're running away?"

Looking at the grinning Alan and the others, I feel disgusted.

It isn't a problem if a nobleman doesn't join His Highness Julius's volunteer army. Rather, it would be better if he managed to disband it.

However, the atmosphere in the school did not allow for that.

It's not just the boys around us, even the girls are giving us cold looks.

Daniel looked at Alan and the others in frustration and muttered in a whisper, "It's dirty."

You are free to join the volunteer army. However, refusing to do so would put you in a bad position in the school.

This is because many boys, and to a lesser extent, girls, have also announced their participation in the volunteer army.

In other words, we are in the minority.

No matter how good of an argument we make, our position cancels it out.

It's called peer pressure.

Alan talks loudly in front of everyone, on purpose.

"Bartford, you have an airship, don't you? I've heard it's a fine airship acquired through adventure. So how can you not join the volunteer army?"

Isn't this where a real nobleman would have volunteered to take the lead? If

I were you, I would have volunteered on the spot when I heard His Highness Julius' speech."

"I am not you and you are not me. Such metaphors are pointless."

It's so embarrassing. It's like an amateur who watches a boxing match, doesn't know anything about it, and says something like, "I would have definitely been able to avoid that straight up now!"

But Alan, with his surroundings on his side, was bullish.

"You're running away, coward?"

We haven't even participated in the war, but they're treating us like cowards deserting it.

Humans are really stupid.

Marie steps forward to defend me and says what she wants to Alan.

"Joining a volunteer army isn't compulsory. Don't make it sound like Leon is on the run."

It's a good argument, but these guys don't get it.

Alan is really bullish because he thinks he is right. If he thinks that the girls around him are on his side, he will be bullish towards even Marie.

"It's His Highness Julius' volunteer army!"

"So what? In the first place--mug!"

Covering Marie's mouth with my hand, I decided to just shut her up for a while. She isn't making this situation better.

—The atmosphere in the school is already strange.

The eyes of the students around us are looking at us as if we are their enemies.

"Sorry, she's my fiancé and quite protective."

When I say that she's my fiancé, Alan makes a blatantly disgusted face.

In the school, boys who have fiancées are the winners of the marriage race.

They are the students who have won, and they are also the objects of jealousy for the boys who are still struggling to get married. Alan also has a frustrated look on his face.

I'm glad to see such a look on you.

"As for volunteering for the volunteer army, I'll consider it positively.

I'm sorry we can't come to a decision sooner. I have a lot of preparations to make, too."

I'm going to decline in a positive way—that's a very Japanese reply in my previous life. It's the magic word that makes it sound like you're

working on something positive, even though you have no intention of doing it.

Alan quickly turns his back on us and walks away.

"Make up your mind quickly. A poor nobleman in the countryside is only worth so much. You should be grateful you're allowed to join His Highness Julius' volunteer army in the first place."

Daniel and Raymond stare at Alan's back, and then quickly turn their gaze to me. Daniel looks frustrated.

"Leon, are you sure you want to keep this up?"

"We can't talk in here. Come with me."

"Hmmm! Hmm~!"

We walk out of the classroom with Marie, who's flailing about.

The eyes of my classmates hurt.

◇

Alan and the others headed to the room where Jilk was.

Jilk narrows his eyes at the sight of Alan and his cronies, making no attempt to hide his discomfort.

"You backed down without them making any promises?"

The plan was to have Leon's airship sent out and made Julius's flagship.

Leon had used Partner when fighting Countess Offley, and Jilk had heard about its performance.

If the Royal Palace wouldn't lend them the power to fight, they would have to procure it themselves.

Alan and the others make desperate excuses so as not to spoil Jilk's mood.

"I wouldn't be this pained if I could tell you that. But, His Highness Julius's flagship can be my ship. I can assure you of a comfortable sailing experience."

Alan is a student with a large war chest.

In addition to his airship, he lends his armor to his cronies and volunteers.

He is a valuable part of Julius's fleet. In fact, he is treated as an executive in Julius's volunteer army.

However, it was only the current situation that allowed him to become

one.

But Jilk couldn't cut Alan off easily either.

"What I want is a warship, not a luxury cruise ship. You must immediately persuade Mr. Bartford to join us."

"But..."

"You have to convince him. —I don't care how. Yes, I have heard that he had a sister. Why don't you talk to some of his other friends?"

Although he avoided being direct, what Jilk wanted to say was,

"Threaten the people involved with him and use them to get him to cooperate."

Alan and the others leave the room in a hurry.

Jilk sees them off and enjoys a cup of his favorite tea in his favorite tea set.

"They are all useless subordinates. But they are risking their lives to become His Highness's subordinates, so we must be patient and use them.

It's all for His Highness and—and Olivia-san."

◇

We took Marie to Master's room. We were invited into a room that smelled like good tea, and in it, we talked to Master about the future.

Master was worried about the current situation too and provided me with a lot of information.

"Julius's—His Highness Julius's volunteer army? I've heard about it as well; the royal palace doesn't approve of it."

It was Marie who listened to master and agreed with him.

"Oh, I knew it. Because it's weird to send students to the battlefield or something."

Only if it were the end of the world, would they send out student soldiers.

That's fine and all, but I don't understand the feelings of His Highness Julius and the others who volunteered themselves.

"I've also been invited."

Master was stroking his chin. "They seem to be aware of what Julius and the others are after," he said.

"They don't want the battle prowess of Mister Leon, they want the airships. They must be in a hurry to get their forces together."

Marie is taking mouthful after mouthful of sweets prepared by her master. Hey, you should be more nervous! Please don't! Don't embarrass me in front of my master!

While he was troubled by Marie, his master graciously allowed her to take as much as she wanted.

Marie said, "Thank you!", and then proceeded to eat them one by one.

—Let's leave her alone.

"Based on the atmosphere in the school, I feel it's dangerous to disobey him."

I seek advice from my master, because I'm sure that if I disobey His Highness Julius and the others, that I would get hurt.

I'm sure they will try to harass us.

"That will happen. The students of the academy are being influenced by the excitement. If that's the case, it might be a good idea to leave the school."

Leaving campus? You want me to run away from the academy? Will I be able to get away with it?

Daniel and Raymond might even volunteer because they don't want to leave.

"My impression of the people around me is the worst. I'd rather be on the battlefield—"

As I said that much, my master smiled at me.

"That's right. Instead of His Highness Julius' volunteer army, Mister Leon should lead his own volunteer army to participate in the war."

Marie stuffed her mouth full of cookies and puffed out her cheeks like a squirrel.

I was startled too.

"Wait! You're asking Leon to join the war!"

The Master nodded.

"That's right. Though it's not the kind of battlefield that Miss Marie would think of.

"What?"

Marie looks alternately at her master and me.

She doesn't seem to understand, so I explain to him.

"Do you know what's important to the war?"

"Strength?"

"That's part of it, but we also need supplies. An army can't fight without ammunition, food for the soldiers, and other things. Getting the supplies to them is going to be very important."

My master nodded, so I must have been right.

"Exactly. Partner would be able to transport a large amount of supplies.

I'm sure the Royal Army would accept it."

"But would they approve of me leading a volunteer army?"

"I'll take care of it myself."

Thank you, Master! But who is master really? Wouldn't he need to have a lot of influence to get my volunteer army recognized? As I thought when I rescued senior Clarice and the others, isn't Master quite an important person?

Then I had an idea.

"Master, this is the volunteer army of His Highness Julius, do you think the kingdom is not going to recognize it as it is?"

Will the King allow it or not? When I ask which will be the case, Master gets a slightly troubled look on his face.

"There's a chance that he will admit it. Rather than letting him run out of control like this, there will be an idea to prepare a battlefield where he can play an active role and let him experience his first battle. That is a possibility."

Then, will His Highness Julius eventually go into battle as well?

This situation is scary because it seems like everything is set in stone.

Like a game scenario.

But I'll be the one changing it.

"I would like to have a meeting with His Highness Julius."

At my offer, the master showed a dubious expression—but he immediately smiled.

"Let me arrange it."

"Thank you."

◇

When I met with His Highness Julius, he was in a surprisingly welcoming mood.

"Bartford, I've heard about you. I heard that you have been recognized as a volunteer army by the royal palace."

His Highness Julius, who wanted to lead a volunteer army to war, was regretting that I got the royal court's permission first. However, he doesn't seem to harbor any emotions against me.

"I've been asked to undertake a transport mission with my companions.

I can't expect to perform as spectacularly as His Royal Highness the Crown Prince."

"I'm not allowed to go to war. You're braver than I am."

"That's not true. Soon, the royal palace will recognize His Highness' volunteer army."

I've heard about it beforehand from my mentor and it's almost a done deal.

It was approved by that maiden, so it will go on as it should.

In fact, when Master went to the royal palace to ask for permission to set up my volunteer army, the talks in the royal palace were coming together in the direction of approving His Highness Julius's sortie.

I also got permission from my master to tell him about it.

"Really? You seem to know something about the state of affairs—do you have a handmaiden in the royal palace?"

"It's a secret."

It must be strange for me, a country nobleman, to have a messenger in the royal palace.

Jilk standing by His Highness Julius's side is smiling..... it's scary because I don't know what this guy is thinking.

However, Alan and the others standing by the wall were staring at me in frustration.

So, I smile.

"We'll do our best to be useful in this fight, too. Good luck to you too, Alan."

"I'm gonna do it without you telling me!"

I, who had made a fool of myself so much, is now leading a volunteer army with the permission of the royal court. I guess that's what Alan can't forgive me for.

His Highness Julius grasps my right hand in both of his.

"We'll follow soon enough. If we meet on the battlefield, I'll look after you."

"Yes, Your Highness."

It makes me sad to see His Highness Julius with a twinkle in his eye, looking forward to the battlefield. I wish he'd get the reality of the situation as soon as possible.

I called out to Alan and then decided to leave the room.

"Alan, don't be reckless."

Alan, who took my words as me mocking him, clicked his tongue.

"You'll see. I'm going to play a part in this war, and I'm going to be a hero."

...You should be happy you're alive. That's all that matters to me.

◇

While Leon was meeting with Julius, Marie was waiting outside the building.

It was not that she would feel uncomfortable about meeting the royals, though, she didn't want to get close to Julius and the others now. It's just that everyone was somewhat tense.

"Sigh, why do men want to go to war? Peace is best, right?"

The boys who hear about the war and are enthusiastic about taking an active role in it.

And the girls who send them out.

Marie couldn't understand them at all.

She heard voices from a place hidden in the shadows of the building, and when she went to take a peek, she saw a man and women embracing each other.

"Yulia, I'm going to get a medal for this fight and come for you."

"Lloyd will be a hero. Just make sure you come back to me."

"Yeah, I promise."

Apparently, the boy named Lloyd seems to be a regular class student. In contrast, a female student named Yulia seems to be in the advanced class.

Witnessing the love between the different identities, she gets a little bit embarrassed. However, Marie immediately thinks.

(You should stop him. He doesn't have to go fight.) Gathering up her courage, Marie approached them. They left in a hurry, and their cheeks were red with a primitive look.

Seeing them, Marie asks Lloyd for help.

"You're a normal class boy, right? Actually, Leon Fou Bartford is leading a volunteer army. Do you want to be a pilot in armor there? We're short on staff."

He managed to mend and solicit with a drawn-out smile.

They were confused by the sudden offer. Only, Lloyd shook his head.

"I'm sorry, but I've decided to join His Highness Julius' volunteer army."

"Oh, yeah? But, wouldn't it be better if it was easier to go into battle?"

"No!"

"What?"

Lloyd tells Marie why he dismissed her proposal.

"Yulia's family is a baronial family. There is a need for Yulia to have a husband, but if I, who doesn't have a reputation, asked for a marriage proposal, it would only be rejected. But if I join His Highness Julius's volunteer army, it would be an honor in itself! I'm going to be a hero, and I'm going to be a man worthy of Yulia—a knight!" Yulia looks at Lloyd with her cheeks dyed red.

"—Lloyd, you've been thinking about me so much."

Marie was puzzled by the two of them.

She gives up trying to convince them as Leon comes out the building, and rushes to him. Meanwhile, the two resume their love-making.

◇

"The palace doesn't give a damn."

Gritting his teeth in the empty room, Jilk was in a hurry because his planned plan to make Partner his flagship had gone awry.

"If I don't do this, I'll cause trouble for Olivia-san in the royal palace. If I do that, my existence is worthless!"

He held his head in his hands.

He was acting impatient and breathing erratically.

Jilk didn't want Olivia to dislike him at all.

He pondered what to do, and then thought about getting a replacement airship.

"Let's scrounge up some airships, even if it's a bit heavy-handed. We've been too lax in the past. This is a battle for the honor of Your Highness. We can't afford to embarrass him."

For Julius' sake, for Olivia's sake—he repeated the same excuses in his head and decided to scrape up the strength, even if it was somewhat forceful.

The plan is to have the students procure it for each other.

Of course, Jilk has no right to make them do that.

However, this plan can be realized. All you have to do is create an atmosphere in the school where they will be forced to provide it themselves.

If they don't provide it, he can drive them away as having no noble spirit.

It's pretty vicious, but Jilk doesn't hesitate.

He puts on a cold expression and leaves the room.

◇

The port where Partner is anchored is packed with people from the poor nobility.

Both men and women are participating in the war as my volunteer army, to make a track record of participating in the war and—to escape from the school, which is surrounded by a bizarre atmosphere.

I watched from the deck as the people I knew boarded from the ramp.

I could hear Marie's voice. Marie is trying to get the girls she knows aboard."Come on, get aboard! Hurry up!"

"Marie, you're scaring me~"

She pushed the small girl hugging the book and forced her onto the partner.

"Just get in! If you were at school, you'd be holed up in the library, right?"

"Yes."

Why are you taking what she said for granted? I looked at the girls who responded like that and I watched, thinking that Marie must be feeling troubled too.

Behind Marie, there were girls who followed behind her— reluctantly following her. They must have been forced out of the school by the atmosphere too.

—But more importantly, aren't there a lot of them? There were more girls than Marie was taking care of before.

Marie doesn't have it easy either.

The girls that Marie is taking care of have a strong habit of taking care of themselves.

The boys in my group are looking at them like hungry beasts.

"If you get on Leon-senpai's airship, you'll have a chance to talk to them!"

"You're kidding me?! Give this place up to your seniors!"

"I don't know! If it comes to this, it's a duel!"

Everyone's eyes are bleary-eyed because their lives are at stake. They ignore the hierarchy and fight each other, which is a sight to behold.

She might be a reclusive girl who loves books, but compared to the noble girls at school, her flaws are more attractive. Love books? I'll buy as many as I can! That's what we boys are all about. It's tens of thousands of times better than being asked for precious metals, giving them away, and then them being sold to a pawn shop a few days later.

—again, I think the school is a sad existence for the boys.

In addition to the girls that Marie is taking care of, there are other girls from the poor aristocracy that come aboard. They must have sensed the atmosphere in the school and fled.

"There's a larger group than I expected."

"The current atmosphere at the school is intolerable."

As I look down at such a scene from the deck, Luxion approaches me.

"It's been a while,"

"Why did you call me, master?"

"I've got a lot on my plate. More importantly, have you finished your errands?"

"Not yet."

"You should prioritize this then."

"Partner's performance is enough to serve the purpose without me.

Besides, I'll leave Arroganz behind"

Arroganz—the armor prepared exclusively for me is larger than the standard armor in this world.

"You're going to leave your master alone?"

"Are you lonely? Don't worry. We have artificial intelligence on board the Arroganz, and we have drones in place in Partner. You have nothing to worry about."

Lately, Luxion has been busy, flying around from place to place, away from my side. If I tell him I miss him for that, he'll say something sarcastic again, so I'll keep quiet.

"Artificial intelligence in the Arroganz? Your replica?"

"I'm sorry, but there's no way to replicate my kind of high-performance artificial intelligence in a space as small as Arroganz."

It's like he's trying to tell me he's a genius.

"But I can assure you that it is better than master."

"You're a real loudmouth. —and how did the investigation of the saint's necklace go?

"The investigation is currently on hold due to low priority."

"I want to know what's going on in the country. Make it a priority"

"I've already collected the magic flute. Isn't it unnecessary? Instead, our priority is to destroy the remains of the new humans. That is an objective that should be achieved."

As usual, he has no mercy for new humans. In a way, is it typical of Luxion? If you look at the harbor, drones are in the process of loading and unloading cargo.

To the untrained eye, it would look like they were using their armor to load and unload their cargo.

"Luxion, stay, we need your help,"

The current situation continued to be unpredictable, and I couldn't help but feel uneasy on my own. That's why I'm giving orders to Luxion—

"I'm judging it to be unnecessary. I don't think my performance will be needed. More importantly, if we leave the remains of the newcomers unattended and a problem arises, it will be a disaster. Like the master

said, there is a possibility that the world could be destroyed."

"Really?"

He's saying that if we leave the remains of the new mankind unattended, the world will be destroyed. I don't think this guy is going to lie to me, so should I make that a priority?

"I'll be back as soon as I can. —I'll be back as soon as I can. I'm sure Master will miss me."

"—That's quite an assumption."

I watched Luxion leave and I looked up at the sky.

"Is it really going to be this simple?"

◇

The Royal Palace of the Kingdom of Holfort.

There, Olivia is meeting with a traitor named Marquis of Frampton. The Marquess of Frampton himself believes himself to be a patriot who has sacrificed himself for his country, and he has no doubt about it.

But the way he did save the country could not be called patriotic.

Such was the Marquis of Frampton - Olivia. No, I don't hate saints. It's because she's more useful than the rest of us.

"It seems that Jilk is trying hard, too. He's doing some cute things so that I like him."

As Olivia read the report, the Marquis of Frampton was dismayed.

"You're receiving complaints every day from the nobles who have their children in the school,"

"Once Julius goes to war, there will be less complaints. It's a great honor to be part of the Crown Princes' first battle. Isn't it?"

"Well, I guess I'll just have to shut up. But do you really want to send His Highness Julius to war? He doesn't have any formal training, you know?"

He wasn't actually worried about Julius, but rather about the palanquin she carried.

It's the same with Olivia.

"There are plenty of alternatives available."

"You really are a terrible woman. For you to be a saint, this must be the end of the world."

At those words, Olivia laughed at the corners of her mouth in a position where the Marquis of Frampton couldn't see her. Her eyes were glazed over.

(You're right. It's the end of the world for the Kingdom of Holfort.) The saint in Olivia, who acts to destroy the kingdom of Holfort, orders the Marquis of Frampton.

"I'll be on the battlefield too. Prepare me a ship were I can use my power."

"Are you sure? It's a student-controlled fleet. You know how much damage you could do..."

"It's convenient. I'm leaving now."

The Marquis of Frampton stopped moving for a moment in front of Olivia's uncharacteristic childlike spirit. Immediately afterwards, he nodded impatiently.

"Okay."

As Olivia walked out of the room, Kyle, who was waiting outside, approached her.

"Gosh, Master, where to next?"

Olivia replies to the question from a nervous Kyle with a smile on her face."I'll follow Julius on his first battle. Kyle will be taking care of me too, so follow me."

"Yes!"

Even though she was heading to the battlefield, Olivia didn't show the slightest bit of panic.

It was because the saint had experienced this many times in the past.

◇

"Good job, Arroganz!"

"There! There! A little more to the right!"

Partner's hangar.

Me and Marie were cheering on the unmanned, moving Arroganz.

As for what Arroganz is doing—.

"—Miss."

—admitting that he made a mistake himself, he watched as the crates, stacked in a huge body, crumbled.

Arroganz is playing with the crates left over from the transport of supplies, using them as building blocks. —not.

Arroganz is gaining experience.

Arroganz, newly equipped with artificial intelligence, moves poorly. If it walks, it scrapes. If it flies, it falls for some reason. When he plays with blocks, he fails.

He's still like a tottering baby.

Such is the case with Arroganz as he heads for the corner of the hangar.

"Arroganz?"

Marie calls out to him, and he sits down with his back to us and stares at the wall.

"What's the matter with you, Arroganz? Are you sulking?"

Marie approaches and tries to get him to stand, but the weapon, Arroganz, doesn't freak out. And yet, he makes an excuse.

"—Recalculating."

"You're sulking, aren't you? You're definitely sulking! Come on, baby, do it again. You can do it again. Arroganz can do it!"

I was sitting on the crate watching Marie, who was desperately trying to encourage Arroganz.

The reason I'm watching the two of them interact is because I'm basically bored.

Even though we're out on the battlefield, we students are on a mission to transport supplies in the rear.

The regular army doesn't consider us a force, and we were told to never go into battle.

We should be glad that there are sane adults left in the field.

Raymond comes to the hangar.

"Leon, we're about to arrive. Huh? Is Arroganz still playing with blocks?"

"Isn't it cute?"

When I bragged about my no-good, cute Arroganz, Raymond didn't seem to understand.

"I don't believe in armour that works unattended. It's not like it's got a ghost on it or anything, is it?"

Raymond and his friends didn't understand when I told them that Arroganz is equipped with artificial intelligence.

Thanks to this, there are rumors that the Arroganz is carrying a ghost.

The only people who come close to him are me and Marie.

I get out of the crate and call out to Marie and Arroganz.

"We're about to arrive. We're about to start unloading and you can get some rest."

"Recalculation is complete."

"I'll tell Arroganz to practice while I'm gone."

"Just get some rest. We're going working."

When Marie came toward me, she put her hands on her hips. It's Marie's outfit, but since it's strange to be in uniform in a hangar, she's in her ties.

"I'm going to go talk to all the girls,"

"Do you want me to help you?"

"Of course! If you leave them alone, a lot of the boys go to their rooms.

Besides, the boys work harder when they're around."

The boys who want to look good in front of girls will work even harder than usual

Men are sad creatures, aren't they?

Raymond laughs.

"I don't blame them for doing so. Well, I'm going to go and talk to the guys."

In the hangar where they left, I look up at Arroganz.

"I don't think anything will come to pass, but if it something does

happen, please lend me some help."

"...acknowledged."

Arroganz responds briefly, raises his arms high—and hits the hanger crane. This robot is a big ditz.

◊

The volunteer army, led by His Highness Julius, was fighting the rebels.

Watching the battle from the bridge of the airship, Olivia smiled inwardly. She enjoys watching her allied ships sink.

(Yes. Sacrifice your young lives in vain. If you're going to hold a grudge against someone, hold it against your ancestors for making you a noble.)

Julius was shouting at the crew.

"Bring this ship to the frontlines! Our flank is being beaten."

"No! His Highness Julius has orders to not bring the flagship to the front!"

"Whose orders?!"

"His Majesty the King!"

"F**k!"

Out of concern for his allies, he tried to step forward. But when he found out it was an order by his father, His Majesty the King, he was forced to stop.

Olivia looked at Julius with a worried face.

Inwardly, however, she wasn't the least bit worried.

(I thought this battle would go on for longer, so this is disappointing.

Still, seeing them fall is going to be interesting.) On the battlefield, the students with their armor, were battling the rebels. The rebels were a

group of renowned air bandits.

They were ordered to retreat if they encountered the regular army, but the volunteer army was easy pickings.

The volunteer soldiers were dropping like flies, by the hands of these experienced men. They were fighting by the textbook.

The air bandits were rewarded for every dead soldier, and therefore fought with tenacity.

This was ordered by Marquis Frampton—and Olivia.

Suddenly, Greg's voice was heard on the bridge.

It seems Greg boarded his armor and led his allies into battle.

"I'm going to help! You guys need support!"

Chris couldn't stand by either. He also led a group of students, with himself at the helm, into the battle.

"You just support them. I'm going to win this battle!"

As the two of them charged in, the bandits were pushed back. But they were experienced too, if you looked down on them, they could turn the tables.

Chris was chasing them around, sword in hand.

"Don't run from me coward! Fight me!"

Julius and Jilk showed the same expression at the sight of him.

"Is the bandits' morale low?"

"Your Highness, I think it's as high as it gets. Now let us rescue our allies."

Seeing Julius, who already knew the bitterness of defeat, even in his first battle, Olivia snuggled up to him.

"Julius, you, the commander can't look down. Everyone is watching."

"You're right. I'm not going to let some bandits defeat me."

Olivia smiled at Julius, who had recovered, but she was cold inside.

(It doesn't matter if you fall now anyways, since you're the next King of Holfort.)

◇

A collection point for supplies built on a floating island.

There, supplies were prepared to be delivered to each battlefield.

Airships frequently came and went.

They were in a hurry. The harbor was overflowed with people and cargo.

Marie and I were in a building in this port.

"We've been here so many times and yet, it's still always beautiful"

Marie watched the scene with admiration. Indeed, the scene of Armor modified for work carrying loads one after another seemed straight out of a sci-fi movie.

This is one of the reasons I enjoy this world so much.

How much better it would be, if it weren't war related.

"Don't leave, you'll get lost."

"Don't be ridiculous!"

While teasing Marie, I entered a building to get my next order. In it I found a poster plastered on a large bulletin board.

No, it looked like a newspaper.

There was a crowd of people surrounding it.

"I heard His Highness won his first battle."

"He's fighting really well with just a volunteer army."

"It says he won three in a row."

The soldiers with the transport mission were shouting in admiration. It seems like His Highness's army was quite active.

Marie looked anxious.

"His Highness and the others aren't going to lose right?"

"Master said he's placed guards around His Highness, who will intervene if needed."

"If they're winning, they'll be fine. We won't all die, right? Right?"

Marie looked uneasy until she heard the answer from me.

"Maybe."

"Maybe? Tell me everything is fine here! How could you not know?"

I'm insecure! I need you to take away my anxiety!"

"I'm an honest man and I'm a very reliable witness."

"Twisted bastard!"

I took the complaining Marie and headed to the room where the big man was.

As for the article I just read, I deliberately avoided negative topics.

How much damage has been done? I don't want to think about it too much.

I want it to be as fluffy and sweet as that otome game world. I'm hoping for a great turn of events where no one dies and they come back.

—What I'm concerned about is that they didn't talk about the damage in

the game. I hope they're all safe, but I'm not sure what's really going on.

As we left, we stopped as we heard a topic of concern.

"Is the young girl on the battlefield too?"

"The Saint? They're saying she's the goddess of victory or something."

"Cute kid."

When Marie heard Olivia's name, she was peeved.

"...'Saint', is it?"

"What, you're jealous? Come to think of it, someone tried to take the title of Saint and failed once."

I laughed at her, and Marie got pissed and denied it.

"It was just a dream! You're stupid forever!"

It was Marie who had tried to get into a meeting with His Highness Julius and the others in an attempt to replace Miss Olivia.

She even attempted made contact with them afterwards, but she failed every time.

It would mean that the mob would not be able to do their best, after all.

As I walked down the hallway talking to Marie, the building was emptied. Not just the soldiers, but even the knights walked out.

"What?"

I could hear the knights talking. One of the loudest ones was screaming to the puzzled knights.

"His Highness Julius is here!"

◇

Once His Highness Julius' arrived, he was warmly welcomed by the staff.

We poor aristocrats felt a bit alienated. After all, our highest priority was to resupply, not greet him.

Marie was back on board, but the boys had mixed expressions at the sight of the volunteer army.

I listened to Daniel and Raymonds' conversation as I surveyed the, now decreased in number, fleet.

"There were more than 10 ships at the start, right?"

"They must have gathered more after we left the academy, so there must have been more."

The others were also looking at His Highness with complicated expressions.

It's possible they routed, but if they didn't, chances are they sank.

"Consecutive victories, huh?"

Every ship except one was safe.

The safe one was the flagship.

◇

At the base of the port, Olivia was conversing with the Marquis.

Olivia held her glass and observed its contents.

"The Principality is acting quite laid back, isn't it?"

She was being sarcastic but the Marquis didn't mind making small talk.

"I see you've reduced the pirates by quite a bit."

"It wasn't really worth it."

"I've also seen His Highness. He's grown up a lot."

Olivia's shoulders shook. She was laughing inwardly. The Marquis craned his neck, puzzled by her attitude.

"What's so funny? He'll make a fine king, I'm sure."

"Yeah, I know."

Despite her verbal affirmation, Olivia was inwardly thinking the opposite.

(Can you really call that growth?)

The Kingdom was going to collapse, just like Olivia predicted.

"More importantly, will the Duke of Redgrave make a move?"

Are you going to war with them? The marquis took a sip of his wine before answering.

"It's been arranged for Vince to be the commander-in-chief. Our faction will not participate in the first group, so we won't get sacrificed. But I've managed to rake in the Redgrave house and some other frontier houses.

They'll sacrifice themselves to take him down."

The Marquis is going to use this to weaken some nobles on the frontier too.

"While I'm at it, I'll remove all those who stand in my way. If no one joins me, others will get suspicious."

"They'll pull Vince down, and weaken themselves in the process. They may be a hindrance, but they'll serve us well."

"You're bad." Olivia raised her glass and smiled.

"I want this country and I'll do anything for it. And I'll be the Queen and you the Prime Minister. Let's continue to be friends, Prime Minister Frampton."

The Marquis was happy at those words.



The Royal Castle of the Principality of Vanoss.

Hertrude was getting ready to lead their fleet into battle. There were maidservants around to help her get dressed, with no men in sight. It was her sister, Hertrauda, who barged into the room.

"Sister, please listen to me just once!"

Hertrude takes one look at Hertrauda's face and returns her gaze to the mirror disinterestedly.

"It's annoying, but without the magic flute the Principality will fall apart
—"

"Why does that matter?!"

"You are royalty, what are you saying?!"

Hertrude was enraged by Hertrauda's words, which made even the maidservants uneasy. She glares at her sister with a sharp look in her eyes

and slaps her as she approaches. A dry thud echoes through the room and the maidservant's distance themselves from the two. The head maidservant tries to warn Hertrude but she ignores her.

"Stand back, I have a lot of things to teach my inadequate sister."

The head chamberlain stops her in a hurry—

"But we must hurry!"

"Just leave."

The maidservants follow the command of Hertrude, intimidated by her tone, and leave the room.

Hertrauda looks at her sister with teary eyes, in the empty room.

"What was that remark? If you say something like that, the people will think they have been abandoned. Hertrauda, do you understand? You are to be the Queen if I don't return. I can't leave you in charge if you continue such behavior."

"Sister, please listen to me."

"That won't be necessary—I'll be leaving."

As Hertrude turned to leave the room, she signals with her hand to Hertrauda. Once Hertrude sees the look on Hertrauda's face, she feels relieved.

"I'll have Hertrauda reflect on this, don't let her leave the room."

"Yes, Your Highness."

(I won't let anyone touch Hertrauda.)

◇

Locked in Hertrude's room, Hertrauda understood what the signal meant.

She found a letter prepared in advance and read it.

"—Sister..."

Tears spill out of her eyes as she reads it. On it, was an apology for Hertrude's previous attitude. It also said that there was no one she could trust. She doesn't know where they're watching from, so be careful. Added in the letter were the names of some suspicious vassals.

The first was Count Gerrat.

Sitting on the bed, Hertrauda clutches the letter with tears in her eyes.

At the end of it, Hertrude requests her to burn it.

She might have to burn her sister's last letter.

"Everything will be taken from me..."

"We are supposed to be royalty, yet..."

She had just been informed of her powerlessness.

Going up to the fireplace, Hertrauda burns the letter.

After doing so, she cries and sobs in frustration.

"Of course, My Queen. No, My Saint."

The two smiled dimly, but it wasn't mutual trust. They were hungry to use each other.

◇

A military base at the goods depot.

Partner, who was ordered to stay on standby, was finally given a mission. I'm the one who talks with him, since Marie is busy with Arroganz.

There's an important man throwing orders in front of me. His attitude is clearly looking down on me, but this great man seems to be a noble. He's probably some far back in the succession line. He is definitely not happy with his assignment with commander of the goods depot.

"The Principality has moved, you volunteer army, go deliver supplies to the frontline."

"The Principality of Vanoss?"

"Yes."

"Just us? Without an escort?"

"You think we have the wherewithal to do that on this base? We're busy over here. In a few days, new volunteer soldiers will arrive from the academy. We're busy preparing to receive them."

This base commander, he's trying to win over His Highness. I guess he's working hard, if His Highness remembers him here, he might make it to the top.

However, there's some information I couldn't ignore.

"More volunteer soldiers are coming?"

"After hearing about His Highness's victory, the remaining cowards seemed to have lifted a heavy hand. Other young nobles who graduated from the academy will also participate. We're planning to form a large fleet."

The commander, with no choice, is helping the organization of the fleet.

Are they still going to rake in more students, after all the damage?

Moreover, they're fighting the regular army of the Principality.

As if the base commander thought he couldn't stay with me forever, he told me to get out of here.

When I left the room, I caught sight of a familiar face. It was the knight I saw at my brother Nicks's castle.

"Long time no see, Leon-sama."

"Yeah, hi."

The knight held out a letter from Nicks.

"A letter from our lord to Master Leon."

"My brother?"

"My lord has been asked to participate in this battle, he has been entrusted with the first line of defense."

I hurriedly skimmed the letter. It seems a lot of things were rushed while I was nonchalantly resting in Partner.

The letter states that the palace has ordered Nicks and Father to join the battle.

"It is an order from the Crown. The same goes for provincial barons or barons."

It can be seen that they are scrambling for strength in a great hurry.

After all, the rebels are running rampant in many places. The regular army can't handle it.

—it's like the same scenario as in the game.

In that otome game, the Redgrave family, who led the first group, should have been defeated. So Angelica's family would have failed.

That's why, it's not good to have my dad and brother there.

I don't want my dad to die, and if my brother dies, I feel sorry for my newly married sister-in-law Dorothy. I can't say this is a good scenario.

The letter said to take care of the rest if you need anything else, but I squeezed it.

"Master Leon, why are you squeezing the letter?"

Nicks' knight is upset so I tell him what I'm going to do.

"We're going to participate. We're already planning to deliver supplies to the frontlines. I'm sure the rural nobles in the volunteer army want to support their parents."

The other guy is like, "What is he talking about?".

It can't be helped; I'm not going to leave it to the Redgrave family.

Damn it! If only Luxion was here. He could gather more information.

That guy is useless at the most important points.



In the fort-like building in the goods depot, the students of the volunteer army led by Julius were holding feast.

There were no knights or soldiers to stop them. Partly because of Julius's position, but also because they had heard the losses of the volunteer army.

In the banquet hall, Julius acted cheerfully.

"My fellow warriors! Thanks to you, our army has won a series of battles! Now, let us enjoy the feast!"

"Long live Prince Julius!"

"We're the best of the volunteers!"

"Even the Principality can be beaten!"

The volunteers, raised their mugs and answering Julius's voice, were drinking like they were bathing in alcohol. They were making fools of themselves.

However, compared to the early days, there were fewer of them. With each battle, the number of those Julius called his comrades-in-arms would dwindle. As a result, they were reduced to about half.

Every time they fought, many of them lost their lives, and even the executive class students who participated with their airships were killed in the battle.

Alan was not here either.

Lloyd was also not here. Greg, and Chris and Brad and the others had formed their own groups and were drinking.

Julius is approached by Jilk.

Only Julius and the other noblemen—the boys who weren't the targets of the attack—were safe.

"Your Highness, the report arrived just now."

"Oh, how'd it go?"

"New volunteers are arriving from the school. Even the alumni heard of our successes."

The banquet hall is in full swing at the report of a smiling Jilk.

Julius stood on a chair and drew the attention of those around him.

"Did you all hear what Jilk just said? Our exploits have reached the Capital! Let us continue to fight a decisive battle against the Principality, and have our name engraved in the history of the kingdom!"

The banquet hall was filled with the excitement of the students.

Julius put a hand to his chest.

"And let us pray for our dead comrades in arms. They were brave. They will continue to watch over us."

As the audience gets excited, Greg raises his voice.

"Our passed friends would like it too! Come on, people! Let's gain a big victory and make sure our dead comrades aren't forgotten!"

Once again, the banquet hall was in full swing.

It was as if they were daring to make a lot of noise to force themselves to forget the events on the battlefield.

◇

The front line.

Leon quickly departed with the rest of the nobles and arrived. Upon his arrival, two ships with the Bartford family crescent approached him.

Soon, they covered both his flanks. This resulted in Partner being sandwiched between the two. On one side, the ship with his father, and

the other, the ship with his brother.

After blocking his escape route, Leon's brother, Nicks, boarded the ship.

"What are you doing on a battlefield?!"

"Don't be so mad. Even if we die, we have Colin."

"Don't jinx it! Besides, what's that young boy going to do after our deaths?! That's one of the reasons me and dad came here instead of you!"

If Colin came to the battlefield, I too would be angry. I can understand brothers' anger.

My father was also stunned.

"Leon, why did you come to the battlefield? You don't have any heroic aspirations, right?"

My father, who knows my character well, wants to know what I want.

Is wanting to prevent your family's death a heroic aspiration?

I may not have Luxion, but I have Arroganz and Partner. It's not like we're lacking in skill.

I can take care of the Principality without my trump card (Luxion).

—There's only one problem.

"I'm leading a group of weak (in political power, not physical strength) nobles in the volunteer army. They want to aid their families, who live around here."

"Is that really why you're here? Tell me the truth."

It's sad, my dad is suspecting me of lying.

"I was worried about my family."

Nicks gave me a distant look.

"You're lying."

"Why would I?! I was so worried about you guys, that I showed up here on a battlefield! You need to trust your brother more!"

"A brother who cares about his family wouldn't sell his brother out to some woman!"

"I'm going to tell sister-in-law!"

"No, stop! That's unfair!"

—Please don't tell me I sold you out. All I did was introduce a possible marriage partner.

Even if she has a bit of a character, she's still a beauty.

"Relax, both of you. He won't be able to go back home, so we'll have him in the rear with you."

My dad had a resigned look on his face.

I'm sorry, but I'm not so heartless as to abandon my family. If I had to choose between others or my family, it'd be my family.

"Leon, this isn't the same kind of fight as the one with the Olfreys and the Lovans. Are you ready for this?"

At his words I straightened my posture and nodded slowly. Not averting my gaze from his sharp eyes.

"I see. So you're still a stupid kid."

Next to my dad, who let out a sigh, Nix was a little irritated. Not at me, it was at our older brother, Rutart, who wasn't here.

"Dad, are you sure you don't want to call Big Brother Rutart?"

Rutart, Zora and the rest of the family were as uncooperative as ever.

They were jealous of Nix, who took over the Olfrey household's Earl

ranking and estate.

Rutart also isn't participating in this battle. Though that's not a problem, since only one representative is needed from each house.

But if my father was to die, the Bartford family would be finished.

If Rutart, who is unable to manage our domain effectively, takes over, it could spell the end for the Bartford family.

Nix didn't hide his hope that Rutart would die before dad.

Let's tease him a bit~

"Nix is quite an extremist. You didn't plan to kill Rutart yourself on the battlefield to prevent him from inheriting right~?"

Nix wrinkles his brow at my attitude, but quickly averts his gaze.

—Hey, you didn't, right?

Retracting his gaze, Nix says he's going to tell me everything. As long as I don't tell anyone else of course.

"Dorothea's vassals investigated the situation, to find one of Zora family's weaknesses and keep them from messing with us."

Zora's family want to get rid of Nix so they can inherit the Earl estate and rank.

In order to prevent them from doing anything, Dorothea sister-in-law has been working hard. Real nobles are amazing.

"Doesn't Zora have a paramour? Supposedly, he looks like Rutart, blonde hair, blue eyes. Nothing like us."

Unlike us, who are dark haired, my brother and sister, Rutart and Merce are blonde and have blue eyes.

My father probably noticed, since he doesn't seem surprised.

"Don't worry about it. On the battlefield, you don't have time to worry about others."

"Are you sure? If Rutart takes over, the territory will be a big mess."

Nix seems to be worried about our home town.

"Even if Rutart does die, if Merce takes a husband he will inherit the territory anyways. Besides, he's not coming."

Father has tried to talk to Rutart, but he just wants to live like an aristocrat. In luxury without caring for anything else.

I'm surprised this country hasn't ended yet.

"As long as Leon and Nix are alive, the blood of Bartford will continue to live."

Me and Nix go silent. My dad, embarrassed, tries to break the ice by telling us about the history of the Bartford family.

"Yeah, I didn't tell you about our ancestors."

"I've heard about how they accumulated war merits."

But my dad shakes his head.

"No, they were former adventurers."

I question the validity of that statement.

"What? We're not accomplished adventurers, though. Wouldn't you brag about your origins if your ancestors were adventurers?"

The Kingdom of Holfort was founded by adventurers. For this reason, the social status of adventurers is high. Even the nobles admire adventurers.

If your ancestors were adventurers, that's a story to be proud of.

"Don't tell me. They were betrayed by everyone and were forced into poverty. I don't want to hear more. Wouldn't that be dangerous?"

Nix is having second thoughts.

"Well, I can't tell you in the first place. Let's just say that our ancestors were tricked. After that, they decided to get some territory on the countryside and live a slow life."

—I understand how your ancestors felt.

I'd rather be a farmer than a hero.

"I feel like I'd get along with those old men well."

Nix looks at me like I'm an idiot.

"What was our ancestors' name?"

"[Lea], [Lea Bartford]"

—Is that true? I didn't think we'd be able to connect so soon.

◇

The fleet of the Principality of Vanoss was approaching the Kingdom.

Inside the flagship, Hertrude and Bandel were conversing.

They were alone, since Bandel and Hertrude were high-ranking—and intimidating individuals.

Hertrude was more than a little nervous in front of Bandel, who'd been protecting her since she was a child.

"What can I do for you? Aren't you busy with preparations?"

Not wanting Bandel to realize that she knew of how her parents died, her question was colder than usual.

Bandel however, could see through it.

"I must apologize to the princess. —About your late Majesty and Queen."

Hertrude wanted to stop her questioning there, but the emotions inside

her were too fierce.

"Why?! Why did a knight as good as you allow them to your lord?!"

"So you knew..."

"Huh?!"

Hertrude got flustered after she realized what she just did. Bandel meanwhile, looked sad.

He knelt in front of Hertrude.

"I will make up for this by offering my life. If you let this old man fight, then I will put my life on the line. I know this is unbearable for you, Master Hertrude. But it wouldn't be wise to kill me."

Hertrude can't give the order to kill him. If she did, someone else might interfere.

But most importantly, she's been with Bandel since her childhood. Her emotions were getting in the way.

"Let me ask you this. Why did you let them die?"

"For revenge."

When Bandel looked up, his face was twisted in anger. Once he realized Hertrude was horrified he quickly reverted it into normal.

"I can't forgive the Kingdom, the Kingdom who killed my family before my eyes. I have decided that I would definitely destroy the Kingdom, for their sake."

Bandel's family has been killed by the kingdom's army that invaded in the past. For this reason, he remained quiet, knowing that Hertrude's parents were going to be assassinated.

"I tried to persuade the two many times, yet they wouldn't change their minds."

"Of course! How much of a difference in military power do you think there is? We definitely wouldn't win. Not to mention the fact that they didn't attack first."

The beginning of the hostile relationship between the Kingdom and the Principality was the fault of Principality.

In the past, the Principality was a Grand Principality under the control of the Kingdom.

Such a Grand Principality attacked the Kingdom.

"I still see them in my dreams at night! The image of my wife and child who died in front of my eyes! Were my child and wife guilty of something, your highness?"

"The Kingdom too has had such people die Bandel, no more—"

"Yes. I understand, but I still hate the Kingdom that took my wife and children from me. I must send as many of them to hell as possible with my

own hands, or else I won't be satisfied."

In the face of Bandel's strong vengeance, Hertrude gives up.

Bandel swears to Hertrude.

"As long as I have my life, I will protect the princesses. It is my way of making amends."

Hertrude, who is a princess in nothing but name, can't do anything about Bandel.

"—Do as you please."

Hertrude sits down on the floor as Bandel leaves.

I can't stop this war, not matter how much I dirty my fingers.

"So I'll end up leaving Hertrauda alone in this world."

Hertrude hopes that her sister, who is not here, will survive.

◊

It was shortly after dawn when they ran onto the Bridge of Partner.

Alarms sounded throughout the ship, waking everyone up.

The robots working on Partner were also scurrying around.

When I came to the bridge, a large monitor showed the approaching airships with the emblem of the Principality of Vanoss on them.

"Two hundred ships. That's a lot more than I thought."

There are three hundred ships on our side. It's a mixed fleet of both the Duke of Redgrave and the regular army.

Right now, they are in the process of forming up in the rear.

"We've taken their trump card, but it's still going to be war."

I want to question the Principality about why they don't want to avoid the war. But there are so many irregularities that I don't even think it's a problem on their side.

In the game, the regular army that was sent to exterminate the air rebels was in the same form, but they were late to the party against the Principality.

Is it really a coincidence that the same trend as in the game was created?

The friendly airships around us were moving in a hurry, and there was a flurry of noisy communications.

I was about to take a seat in the captains' seat when Marie came in.

She was hugging a pillow, perhaps sleep-deprived, and her hair was a mess.

"The enemy's attacking?!"

"Calm down. The enemy only just arrived. Now go get dressed."

After Marie realized what she was wearing, she rushed out. Turing my head, I lay my eyesight on the sky where hundreds of airships were gathered.

"It was spectacular in the game, but in real life more so."

The allied airships were ordered to stand in formation by the Redgrave family. The enemy mirror our formation.

The cannons have a short firing range.

We use cannons lined up on the sides so that when we fight, our ship's bow doesn't need to face theirs.

However, we're in an airship.

It's extremely tricky to rotate up and down, let alone left and right.

Both sides formed up while ascending, but some of the airships were unable to keep up.

Some of them had poor maneuverability and ended up clashing with others.

"This is no good."

When the crew of an airship doesn't even train on a regular basis, this is about as good as it gets. Some houses take their training seriously, while others don't.

Thanks to this the level of skill is uneven. The airships with good movements are moving with the ones with poor movements, making all of them look bad.

Individually, there are some excellent ships on the Kingdom's side, but taken as a whole, the Principality wins.

The Duke of Redgrave will be dragged down by their surroundings.

In contrast to the nobles' current army, the Principality's army is a regular army that has been trained regularly.

Their moves were flawless, with no motion wasted.

When Marie returned, she had Daniel and Raymond behind her. Both of them had an impatient look on their face.

Marie was surprised by the Principality.

"Geez! They got the upper hand!"

Even Marie seemed to understand. Gaining the initiative was important in battle. But their forces are still outnumbered.

Daniel is frustrated by the lack of skill on our side. Suddenly, one of our ships ignored his orders to form up and moved forward.

A terrible voice came from the communicator.

"I am Viscount Beaudon Allen! I'm enough to defeat the cowards in the Principality's army!"

Daniel became flustered as he saw the airship of Allen charge at the enemy. He shouted at him, but Allen couldn't hear.

"Allen? He's Alan's brother. He is the second son, I believe. I heard he graduated last year. Why is he on that trashy ship."

The movement of the ship is terrible.

Alan's brother, who was in His Highness's volunteer army, charged forward in a luxurious looking ship. Is no one going to stop him?

Once within range, flashy armors came off the deck of the ship and charged towards the Principality's army. But the moment they entered the cannon range of the Principality's airships, the cannons' started firing.

Even if their accuracy is low, if you shoot enough, they're bound to hit once.

Allen's ship deployed a magic barrier—but it was overwhelmed. The airship was battered and was on fire.

Through the communicator came the voice of a confused Allen.

"Why is no one coming?! I need assistance! I'm a baron!"

These types of people are born sometimes.

A child born to nobility who is arrogant is taken as standard. You can fix these types of people in the academy to a certain extent, but even if they learn to be polite to the nobles, they will still look down on the commoners.

This attitude seems to be prevalent in the Beaudon family.

"Help! Duke of Redgrave! Please hel—"

As the airship exploded, Allen's voice was cut off.

Marie was blue-faced and trembling.

"Ugh, you liar. I can't believe you died so easily."

He may have had heroic aspirations, but he was still a nuisance. The army doesn't need such people.

He'd never been in battle before, yet he still wanted to take out an airship with his flashy one.

Now the pieces of his airship were scattered among the battlefield.

From the communicators you could hear voices blaming and defending the Duke.

"Why didn't you save him! The duke is using us like pawns!"

"It's that kid that jumped out!"

"That doesn't mean you should leave a brave young man to die!"

All I can say is 'terrible'.

In that otome game, there's an event where the Duke of Redgrave loses a battle against the Principality.

After they blundered the battle away, the protagonists began to take action.

The detail of the battle were not told in detail.

But if what he was witnessing happened in reality, it would be hard to blame the Duke.

"Leon, the enemy is coming!"

I look forward in silence as Marie grabbed my arms.

I was expecting the worst, but the battle was going as it should.

Suddenly, the enemy I least wanted to see, was attacking my allies.

The guy was a full size larger than the armor around him, and he was slashing at airships with a great sword. It slashed through the hull of an airship, then went inside to destroy it completely.

The airship, broken, fell down from the sky.

"It's the black knight! The black knight is out!"

The allies, scared by the armor, were trying to distance themselves from the Black Knight, Bandel. Some of the airships collided with each other and some were even falling.

Daniel shook his head forcefully.

"If we go near him, we're finished, aren't we?"

The strongest knight in the land. The enemy of the Kingdom. The tyrant of the battlefield. That black knight was attacking Leon's allies.

While the allies were dealing with the Black Knight, the enemy ships began bombarding them.

Raymond understood what was going to happen after this.

"Leon, let's retreat. We'll lose if we don't."

I'd like to retreat too, but if we retreated, we'd suffer punishment. It would be lighter than the regular army because we're only volunteers, but it's still a punishment.

"It's the other way around. Partner, move forward."

"Huh?!"

The look on Daniel's face said, "What the hell is this guy talking about."

But I was serious. Partner's performance is way above the others in this battlefield.

"Don't look down on partner's barriers and armor." As partner pushed forward, shells come flying at it.

The barrier around him however, repelled them. The barrier around Partner was impervious to the Principality's shells.

Even though it was under concentrated fire, Partner continued to float.

Seeing this, Raymond adjusted his glasses.

"Great! Great job, Leon! This way, our allies can reform their formation!"

My allies regrouped behind Partner and fixed their formation—I had envisioned such a thing, but reality doesn't seem to be that sweet.

Marie held both her cheeks and shouted.

"They're leaving!"

Some of the nobles fled, judging they were losing.

They turned and fled, using Partner as a decoy.

"It's worse than I imagined."

With even the advantage in numbers gone, Marie sticks her head to the window.

"There's a black armor coming here!"

The black knight must have decided that Partner was a threat. But he's too naïve, defeating Partner's barrier is impossible.

"No matter how good a knight he is, Partner—eh?"

As the Black Knight slashed at Partner, the area he attacked was emitting a fierce light. The area seemed to be cracking

"Official cheats are the worst, aren't they?"

Daniel and Raymond were confused by my words, while Marie was shaking with a blue face.

This had gotten out of control, so I got up and started to walk to the hangar—then I saw the armor charging at the black knight. I examined it and once I realize who's it was, my eyes widened.

"What are you doing, dad?!"

◇

When the Black Knight attacked the airship, an armor appeared to intervene.

The armor wasn't flashy, and looked plain.

However, it was well-maintained.

The rider's skills weren't bad either.

"So there is a skilled a rider here. But with that level of skill—"

Bandel swung his great sword down at his opponent, who was supposed to be blown away.

But the opponent managed to hold on, despite the numerous slashes he received.

Each slash was the personification of Bandel's anger.

"Your sword arm, and piloting skills! I'm better than you in all of them!"

You know why? Because of my hatred for you!"

As he made contact with the other man, he heard a voice.

"My son is on board that ship. I won't let you drop that ship!"

Hearing this Bandel's eyes narrowed and he laughed.

"So you have your son on board that ship—if that's the case!"

Bandel's great sword slashed off the opponents limbs.

Bandel then grabbed his head.

"Hey! What are you doing?!"

Hearing his enemy's panicked voice, Bandel bore his white teeth.

"You will suffer as I did! I'll show you how it feels to have your child killed right in front of you!"

The great sword that Bandel's armor is holding is made of adamantis. It is a lost item prepared just for him.

It is the only technology able to break Partners' barriers, since it's a new technology with no countermeasures.

"No matter how much you struggle, this battle was meant to be won by the Principality from the start!"

As he said this, Bandel was repeatedly slashing the barrier, attempting to

break it.

"You! Stop! Leon, run!"

Bandel laughed out loud at his opponent's scream.

"Yes, shout! That cry will heal my heart!"

Bandel recalls the scene he saw that day.

Bandel was on a mission to intercept the Royal Army that was attacking the Principality' capital when he saw his house destroyed.

He saw the armor of the Royal Army smashing through his house and reaching out to his family inside.

He rushed towards the house, but he couldn't get there in time, and his family died before Bandel's eyes.

"My wife was a good woman! A good woman who didn't deserve that fate! She was so young too! She even sacrificed herself for our daughter, yet you!"

Bandel began to cry; his mind unstable.

"For the sake of my family I—I even took away the princesses' parents.

I can't stop now. I will only stop when I kill every last one of you."

As the barrier shattered, an armor came out.

"Let go of my father!"

"Nix, you better run!"

Apparently, a different son came.

Seeing this, Bandel made a strong decision.

"I will kill both of your sons! And make you feel as I did!"

"Huh!"

The enemy, with a missing limb, desperately tried to resist, and stand in Bandel's way.

"You outcasts of the Kingdom! You all are going to hell—"

—Before he could finish, Bandel's army shook violently.

"Guh!"

As he turned around, he saw a much larger gray armor there. As it swung its blade towards Bandel, he caught it with his great sword.

"What?!"

Bandel was surprised by the opponent's strength. It seems that the one riding there is also the son of that man he captured.

"I would have preferred to save the princess. I don't have a preference for old men!"

He looked like a light-hearted fellow.

"It's the same thing one after the other! No amount of cutting will break my armor!"

I've defeated numerous enemies in the past.

Yet, the number of enemies of the principality never decreases. One after another, they appear and try to defeat the Principality.

The new armor holds up its sword.

"Old man, it's time for the new generation to shine. Retire!"

"Keep your mouth shut, kid!"

He threw down the armor he was holding (Barcus), but another armor (Nicks) caught it. Bandel ignored the large armor (Leon) coming at him to

dispose of the other (Nicks) first. But the large armor (Leon) closed in on him.

"I won't let you get away, old man!"

He must be quite powerful.

With that thought, a new ambition came to Bandels' mind.

To kill all the powerful knights growing up in the Kingdom.

"I'll start with you!"

◇

Leon was riding in Arroganz, trying to defeat Bandel.

"What the hell is this guy really?!"

—I'm surprised at how strong he is.

In front of Arroganz, who can't help but be called a cheat, the Black Knight was holding a equal—no, more than an equal fight.

I'm the one being pushed back.

The hard armor of Arroganz is being chipped away by his great sword.

I'm attacking too, but he avoids my attacks with his maneuverability.

"Isn't this guy's very existence a cheat?"

When Arroganz's blade caught Bandel's great sword, it shattered.

Leon hurriedly got out of range and took out his rifle.

But the Black Knight moved too fast to be hit.

Arroganz tried to make the calculations, but the Black Knight was too fast.

"I don't understand."

Even Arroganz is confused as he deals with the Black Knight.

"I agree with that opinion, but we can't stop here!"

We're flying in a battlefield.

The Kingdom's army is fighting the Principality, but they're outnumbered.

I want to help them, but I can't take my attention off the Black Knight.

Partner is preventing other airships from interfering in our battle.

"This would have been a close call if I was alone."

I can't stop sweating. I was right to bring friends with me.

"Sure, you're a bit skilled. But without that armor, you're no match for me!"

As he closed the distance, I shot at him. But he dodged the bullet and slashed at me.

I quickly blocked it with my rifle, but it was cut in half.

"Arroganz, missile!"

"Missiles launched."

Missiles are fired one after another from the container on Arroganz, attacking the Black Knight. The Black Knight, who is chasing after the backward-flying Arroganz, must have never seen the missiles that are attacking him before.

He cuts them with his great sword and charges through the explosion.

"You overpowered bastard!"

That strength is bullshit. I'm also overpowered, but it's crazy that I still can't win.

The black knight closes the distance and one of Arroganz's arms is slashed off.

"Die, kid!"

In front of the black knight who stabbed the big sword into the cockpit, I was prepared to die.

I was feeling pathetic at the stupefying end even though I had Arroganz —.

"Oooh!"

It was my dad who shouted out loud and charged me with his limbless armor. The black knight lost his stance to the surprised and the great sword missed me.

But the great sword stabbed into the armor (his dad's) cockpit. He leaned to the left to dodge it but it seems he was still injured.

I'm wounded in the right half of my face by the Great Sword and some parts of Arroganz are broken too, and I can't see what's going on outside because the monitor is smashed.

Arroganz seemed to automatically keep his distance from the black knight, so there was no chase.

I heard my dad's voice. "Why didn't you run?"

I purged the hatch and looked outside; I could see my father's armor pierced by a large sword.

"—Dad!"

As I shouted, the black knight slowly turned to me and threw away the armor that my dad rode on with a swing of his great sword.

"How does it feel to have your family die in front of you?"

I hear the Black Knight's voice and grind my teeth.

"It sucks. It really sucks."

I couldn't help but hate the enemy in front of me. It was impossible for me to control my helpless emotions.

All I could think about was killing the Black Knight.

"That's good. I felt the same way. And killing you like this is worth it."

I grabbed the control stick and headed towards the Black Knight with the battered Arroganz.

But feelings alone won't fill the skill gap.

Arroganz had accumulated a lot of damage during the last fight.

"Damn it!"

"All that's left is to kill you, sink that ship and be done with it. The Royal Army won't be able to stop us."

Partner has my friends and—Marie on board.

"It's not going to be that easy!"

The black knight's movements slowed down as he charged at Arroganz, ready to strike me. It was Nix's tattered armor that jumped on him from behind.

"Leon, do it!"

The black knight clicked his tongue and roughly slapped Nix's armor away.

"Don't get in the way!"

Nix was blown away immediately, but it took the Black Knights concentration away for a moment. Thanks to that, Arroganz was able to close the distance.

The black knight stabbed the great sword at Arroganz as he charged at him. He forcefully avoids the great sword that is approaching the cockpit.

I'm convinced of victory when he pierces Arroganz's legs and tries to pull the sword out.

"If you were going to aim for me, you should have made it to the cockpit!"

With his remaining arm, Arroganz struck the Black Knight's cockpit.

A fist pierced the black knight's armor, and Arroganz transmitted a voice message.

"—Impact."

At the same time as he said it, he slammed the impact into the Black Knight's

interior. Then, the Black Knight's armor bobbed up and down from inside and exploded as it was.

Limbs are blown off and the great sword also falls.

From the cockpit part that barely remains, the voice of the black knight who is about to die can be heard from the cockpit part.

"I'm sorry—Princess.

The black knight's armor, which discharged with a buzz, exploded in the air as Arroganz threw it away.

"Oh, it's done."

The tension released and I took several deep breaths. Sweat gushes out and I'm relieved to realize that I'm alive.

The reactions of those around me who saw the falling black knight were mixed.

The Principality's troops were saddened, and the allied Kingdom troops cheered.

"That's right. My father! Arroganz, find my dad!"

He immediately goes to find his dad, but Nix has retrieved his dad's armor first. I blame Nix in front of him.

"Why did you make me charge my dad!"

"My dad jumped out at me! And you would be dead if it weren't for me!

—Dad is the only reason you're still alive."

Nix's voice sounds like he's about to cry. Nix's armor hugged the armor that had been pierced through the cockpit.

I couldn't speak either, and I turned over.

"I could have been faster—"

I was just about to regret it when I heard my dad's voice.

"Ka, don't judge me dead without checking."

When I looked up, Nix let out a surprised voice.

"Dad, you're alive!"

"Yeah, so get me to a doctor quickly."

Nix and I left the battlefield, where the Principality was in trouble this time after the Black Knight was defeated.

◇

In the royal capital of the kingdom of Holfort, the victory of the kingdom's army had been reported.

The royal capital was in a festive mood, but in a room in the royal palace, the Marquis of Frampton had a bitter look on his face.

Originally, he had planned to have the Royal Army led by the Duke of Redgrave's family be defeated. That was why he had sent in the

incompetent nobles.

Not to mention his political enemies, he had planned to dispose of all the useless nobles and his enemies together.

That was why the Principality won (In the original otome game).

"The Black Knight is getting old. How pathetic; to be defeated by a student."

The people who took out the attackers were related to the Bartford family, one of whom was a student.

Although the three of them had to team up, the defeat of the Black Knight is good news for the kingdom.

Rumors quickly spread, and the reputation of the Baldfalt family is growing even within the royal court. Among others, Nix's wife Dorothea's family—the Roseblade family—was happily mentioning their activities.

This was not amusing to the Marquis of Frampton.

"I guess I expected too much from the useless the Principality."

With the exasperated Marquis of Frampton was Olivia, sitting on the sofa, smiling.

She held a glass in one hand.

"It's a pity this happened. But Julius also played an active role, so let's let it go this time. Besides, the Duke of Redgrave's family will be in trouble for a while."

Due to a fierce battle with the Principality, the airship on which the head of the Redgrave family was riding was also hit.

The head of the family, Vince, was also injured in the battle.

As he is unable to move for a while, his son takes his place. However, the

son has probably been injured as well.

Although the plan has been somewhat derailed, Olivia and the others' victory is unchanged.

"Originally, it was supposed to be a spectacular debut match for the Saint."

"I don't mind. More importantly, how is the captured Duchess doing?"

At Olivia's words, the Marquis of Frampton replied immediately.

"She knows too much of the unnecessary. Let her meet her royal end.

She would rather die than be captured by the enemy and be a liability to her country."

For this reason, if the Kingdom were to get their hands on Hertrude and she confessed, the Marquis would be in trouble. So here, he's detailing the excuse for her death, suicide, when actually it's murder.) Olivia smiles when she hears this.

"How scary."

◊

Angelica, the daughter of the Redgrave family, was visiting the office of her brother Gilbert, who is acting as head of the family due to his father's injury.

The reason was a protest against the treatment of Hertrude, an enemy princess captured by the Duke and Duchess of Redgrave.

"Brother, why? It was father who took Hertrude captive. And yet, what is the royal court thinking of by ostracizing the Redgrave family?"

Angelica's frustration is that the Redgrave family, who have served in the war, are despised by the royal court.

And the one person Angelica couldn't forgive- Olivia.

"What on earth is His Highness Julius also thinking? Not only did he lead a volunteer army to participate in the war, but he even took that woman with him to show his friendship."

Gilbert let out a small sigh as Angelica expressed her frustration in front of her brother. Gilbert is busy these days, and he understands what Angelica wants to say.

But he tells her that the Redgrave family cannot get involved.

"Now that your father is absent, I'm very busy. The truth is that I can't even get involved in the affairs of the royal court."

"But!"

"The matter of His Highness Hertrude doesn't make me happy here either. The Marquis of Frampton seems to want His Highness Hertrude to be dead."

"Aren't we supposed to be negotiating?"

Angelica is suspicious when she hears that they have the enemy's royalty and won't use it for negotiations.

"We could have them prepare a huge ransom from the Principality for the return of Hertrude, and we have other uses for her."

She doesn't understand why they don't do that and try to make her a deceased person.

"Because thanks to His Highness Julius, His Highness' faction has lost its power. We're out of the mosquito net."

Even Gilbert couldn't seem to determine what was going on in the royal palace.

Angelica clasped her hands together.

"I will speak with His Highness Julius."

Gilbert shook his head at Angier's offer.

"Brother?"

"-The details of the royal court are not known to me, but Prince Julius is thinking of calling off your engagement. The news has come to me."

"What!?"

Angelica is upset when she hears that Julius is thinking of breaking off the engagement.

"Why? What did I do wrong?—"

Angelica was furious, but Gilbert silenced her with a sharp look in response.

"It's all your fault. Why didn't you stop His Highness Julius? The same goes for your behavior on campus. What the hell were you doing while you were by his side?"

When Julius led the volunteer army to join them, his fiancée Angelica's family home had not received any news.

And due to the actions of Julius and the others so far, the power of the faction of the Redgrave family has been reduced considerably.

Angelica looks down.

"I have tried to stop him many times, but my voice can't reach His Highness Julius."

Angelica speaks in frustration.

Gilbert, who is busy, can't deal with this situation right now.

"If you'd kept a better eye on her, then this would never have happened."

Angelica bit her lower lip as her brother, Gilbert, rebuked her.

If only that woman hadn't been there.

Angelica decides to take action.

◊

Angelica heads to the mansion where Hertrude is being held captive.

Although she was part of the war, Hertrude, who is royalty, can't be put in prison.

When Angelica enters this mansion, the Knights guarding it stop her.

"I'm sorry. We've been ordered to not let anyone pass."

"It's the Redgrave family who captured her. Shouldn't we be allowed a visit? Besides, I've got the palace's permission."

When Angelica showed the Knights the permission slip, they reluctantly let her through.

Once she was in Hertrude's room, she dismissed the Knights, saying she wanted to talk to her alone.

The room was well-furnished, and didn't look like a prison.

However, there were iron bars installed on the windows.

"It's been a long time, Your Highness Hertrude."

When Angelica called out to her, Hertrude sat down in her chair gave her a quiet look.

"Let's make this short. Why did the Principality invade the Kingdom?

Considering the power difference, it's nothing but a bad move."

In this world of war, the side with the initiative has the advantage.

But no matter how quick the Principality is, the difference in power would still be too large to make up.

In most fights, you can see the outcome.

Hertrude looked pale and weak.

"—The Kingdom still doesn't know about that."

"That?"

"It's nothing."

Hertrude examined Angelica's appearance—and made some conditions.

"I need you to promise me one thing—no, two if you can."

"I'm not strong enough to grant your wishes."

"That's okay. You need only do it if you can. Firstly, I need you to keep Hertrauda safe."

She wants her sister to survive, but Angelica isn't going to be able to grant that wish.

"I don't think I can make that happen."

"I'm sure you're right. The power of the Redgrave family has fallen."

"You seem to know a lot about the palace."

Angelica knows there are people in the Royal Palace connected to the Principality. Those people would sell information too.

However, Hertrude's next words surprised her.

"Because the reason the Principality invaded was because of an order from the Kingdom."

"What are you talking about?"

"It was a noble from the Kingdom who requested the Principality to go to war. You know the Marquis of Frampton, don't you? He's behind it."

"Stupid."

"If you don't believe me, that's fine. Just consider my words bullshit and

forget them."

Why would the people of the Kingdom let the Principality invade?

After pondering, Angelica came to the answer.

Many of the people fighting against the Principality were either hostile to or estranged from the Marquis of Frampton. The nobles who were friends of the Marquis were having trouble participating.

Were they really going to be discarded?

Angelica was mad at the Marquis' methods. She didn't like the way he used and buried his enemies.

"I knew from the start we couldn't win. I knew from the beginning we couldn't win. But I couldn't stop them. I had no power to stop them."

Seeing Hertrude cry, Angelica asks:

"What's your second wish?"

"I want you to tell my sister—that I loved her. I really wanted to write to her, but I wasn't allowed to."

With those words, Angelica understands.

Does he want her dead so she doesn't talk?

"I'll do what I can, as long as I can."

"Thank you, Angelica."

Averting her gaze from Hertrude, who looks dead, Angelica heads outside—

—In order to inform the Queen.



The royal palace was busy with post-war activities.

I was returning home to my parents' territory because of my injuries.

The right side of my injured face was fortunately unharmed, but the wound was to remain. I was supposed to have lost my eyesight as well, so if I could only get away with this level of injury, I'd be happy.

It's an admirable victory, even if we had to join up to beat the Black Knight.

It's probably too light a price to pay. Standing in front of the mirror in my room, I cover the right side of my injured face with a cloth.

The eye patch would probably be there forever, but I've prepared a cloth to cover my cheek and eyes temporarily.

However, my eyesight has already been restored, though the injury is still there.

Standing beside the mirror, I look at my current appearance and give a nod.

Beside me, who is satisfied, Luxion is not happy. The reason he is unhappy is because I'm keeping the injury. He said he could treat me, without leaving a scar.

"Are you hiding your face because you're not confident in your appearance?"

As soon as he comes back, he says something like this...

"Boys love their eye patch."

"I understand it's to cover your scar. But I can treat it."

"Unfortunately, a lot of people have seen me with this injury. If I go out without it, they would definitely be suspicious. It's best to leave it be."

The reason I'm going through this trouble is because I saw a doctor already. They know about my injury.

But if I go back saying I'm fully recovered; they'll be wary of me.

That's what I'm trying to avoid.

"If you'd been there, this would have never happened in the first place."

"That's a lie. Master would not have been serious against the Principality even with me present. At worst, you would try to cut corners and be beaten to a pulp by the Black Knight."

I was having a conversation with Luxion for the first time in a while when Marie interrupted.

"Leon, Clarice-senpai wants to talk to you about something."

"She wants to talk?"

Before Leon knew it, Luxion had disappeared.

Clarice Fia Atley, the countess of a count family whom I had previously rescued at the request of my master, is secretly hiding at my floating island.

The same goes for her cronies.

Before Marie could respond to my question, Clarice-senpai showed her face from behind.

"I heard you were injured, so I came to check up on you."

There was only one male crony waiting behind Clarice senior. It seems that they came here from the floating island that I own.

They probably want to hear the current situation from me directly.

"It's been a while, both of you. How have you been doing?

On the contrary, they were both dismayed to see me worrying about them. They have the attitude that I should be worried about myself, not them.

Clarice-senpai shrugged her shoulders.

"You're the one who's in more trouble than I am. 'I heard you were hurt.

Besides, didn't you say that Lord Barcus, who is sheltering us, was also badly injured? Is he okay?"

My father was badly injured and is still in the hospital in the Capital.

Mum went to the Capital to take care of him.

Thanks to that, the mansion is quiet.

"He's fine. But he won't be able to move for a while, though.

"So you're going to substitute for him? Nix-senpai is too busy with the Earl to take care of his family home."

My dad and I were injured and couldn't move, so Nix was supposed to move around for the ceremony and all that. I was able to take it easy because of that.

I admire my brother for sticking up for his brother who was badly injured even when I could have treated my injuries and such right away.

But I don't want to stand out from the crowd.

"It's the country, you know. I can handle it."

"Don't get too comfortable. It's at times like these that house fights occur."

Clarice-senpai, a court nobleman living in the royal capital, seems to think that the country and the city are the same. Like it or not, who would want this land? The relatives who knew the value of this land wouldn't care.

"Who would want to manage a fief like this—"

Just as he thought Clarice-senpai was being too mindful, his brother Colin came running in.

"Brother Leon! The wife is here!"

"What—?"

Zola and her family came to the territory where his father and mother were absent.

◇

I was assigned to answer Zola's call, and I come to the parlor with Marie.

The servants working in the mansion were frightened when Zola and the others showed up.

They're not usually present in the mansion, but they're high-handed and have a bad reputation.

Zola—the wife who is my father's real wife, but she usually lives in the royal capital. She rarely goes out to the countryside, but when she comes, she always brings trouble with her.

She is dressed in a fancy dress, and Merce, who is sitting on the sofa near her, is also very well dressed.

She was dressed twenty percent more than usual, and her attitude was huge as usual.

But this time, even Rutart is dressed up, which is a surprise.

He looked victorious in front of me.

"You look hapless."

"Wounds are a decoration, my brother."

"Yeah, you're all talk."

Since he was acting sarcastic, I talked back immediately, but Rutart doesn't lose his bullish attitude, as if he judged my words to be a sore loser.

Only to have Marie blurted out next to me.

"You ran away from the battlefield and didn't even join in, though. For the most part, you're too much of a coward to even refuse to enter the territory."

"Ugh!"

Rutart looked regretful in front of Marie, but he couldn't say anything back since she's a noble. Instead he attacks me

"You let the girls say what they want to say and you shut your mouth?

It's hard to think that this is my brother. More importantly, I can't wait for you to get out of this mansion."

Marie's eyes widen in surprise as she looks at me. —I'm also surprised.

"—What?"

Rutart told us to leave, and it was Zola who aided him.

"If Barcus is injured and unable to do the work of the head of the family, then we must have a replacement. Rutart is the right person to take his place. In addition, I'll have him replaced, so from today onwards the mansion belongs to Rutart."

You've never looked at us before, and now you suddenly want us to give you our position and territory? To begin with, my father is firmly in the consciousness of his father.

How is he going to stop them?

"This is very sudden. Please wait for me to check with my father."

Basically, 'Go home!'. But on paper, Zola and her family are in a higher position (of inheritance) than me. Even if they don't have my father's blood in their veins.

Merce interrupts our conversation.

"You don't need to consult him. It's a royal decision."

The palace? Why is the royal court going out of its way to make a move for a frontier baronial family?

Why is the royal palace, which has been treating them like lowlife until now, suddenly intervening?

Zola proudly shows me the letter.

"It's a letter from the royal court. 'Rutart is fit to be the new heir of House Bartford. When Rutart becomes head of the family, your other brothers and sisters will not be needed.' Now get out of here."

I got the impression that they were in a great hurry, even if they were to replace him and Rutart became the head of the family. It's as if they want to get rid of us quickly.

Marie stuck to Zola.

"I don't agree with you! Why does that guy deserve in the first place?

You're not going to be in the field of battle, and you can't even do the estate work. Are you sure you're serious about this, Rutart? Didn't you hate the countryside?"

Then Rutart reveals his true feelings.

"The Bartford family can join a prestigious family after defeating the Black Knight. And yet, when the head of the family is an old, country-looking man, doesn't it make you embarrassed? I grew up in the city, and I'm the one who deserves to be the head of the Bartford family today.

I looked at Rutart, who was smiling darkly and puffing out his chest, and was relieved to know that he didn't think anything of the territory.

Also, you take us too lightly.

This guy is a colossal fool for telling us about their situation.

However, if they have permission from the royal palace, I can't do anything about it.

I couldn't even think of meddling until now.

Merce looks at her manicured nails.

"That's what I mean. You guys have to get out of here. It's Rutart who lives here."

It was Marie who was offended by this attitude.

"Why should we give it to you guys! Father-in-law is alive and well!"

You have to get his permission!"

I noticed the fan on Zora's mouth. It hid a grin.

"We don't need that man's permission. The royal court's permission is enough for me."

"You've got to be kidding me!"

I evacuate the room with a heated Marie.

"Let's take a short break. Marie, you come over here."

"You can't do that! Talk back to her!"

"I don't care."

I forced her out of the room.

◇

I headed to the other room and found my brother Colin—and my sister Finley—with Clarice-senpai.

Colin looked anxious.

"Clarice-san, are they going to kick us out?"

Clarice-senpai smiles at Colin, who is worried about being kicked out.

She comforted Colin with a gentle voice.

"It's okay. I'm sure Leon-kun will take care of it."

"Yes."

I'm glad senior Clarice and my brother trust me, but I personally can't do anything about it. Because if the palace gives permission, I can't go against them myself.

At best, the only solution I can think of is for everyone to take refuge in the floating island I own and live as is.

I don't want to abandon my hometown, but Rutart was going to take over eventually. He knew that sooner or later; this day would come.

"Mrs. Clarice says this, what do you think Marie?"

"Why do you call me that? Why do you guys not address me with an honorific, when you call Clarice 'Miss'? Hey, why? I'm older than you!"

Finley and Colin looked at Marie, who was unconvinced.

"Hey."

"Yeah. Marie is family, you know."

Seeing Marie's complicated face, Clarice senior became uncomfortable or changed the topic.

"Even so, they're being quite forceful even though the head of the family hasn't even died. I suppose they want the achievement of defeating the black knight, but he himself hasn't even been to the battlefield, right?

Rutart refused to go to war. That in itself didn't make my dad angry because he expected it.

He didn't expect him to come out, and he didn't want him to be deputized in the territory.

"Rutart refused and didn't participate, did he?"

He's already 20 years old. He himself doesn't work and lives in the Capital.

Come to think of it, I've never heard of him having a wife.

What is he doing in the Capital? It's such a tenuous relationship that I don't even know. So we don't even recognize each other as family, and we weren't actually family.

Marie crossed her arms in frustration.

"Does he think you can take credit by taking away the family name?"

Clarice-senpai answered that question immediately.

"He's not wrong. Even if he didn't participate, it's true that Leon-kun and the rest of the team got the credit for it. Once he inherits the house with those merits, they have an effect on his reputation."

Clarice-senpai predicts the future.

"I'm concerned that they're being too forceful. I don't know, maybe they'll take Partner from Leon. Or worse, Leon's floating island."

I hear that and anger flares up inside of me.

"What? What's to be taken away?"

"That's why you're so desirable. That's how attractive it is, I suppose, that most people want it, even if they have to use forceful means. I'm sure there are a lot of people who would like to have partner in the royal palace, too."

I really don't want to get involved with the intentions within the royal palace or anything like that.

It's too annoying and irritating.

Trying to take my utopia away is unforgivable.

That island holds everything I have in it.

Anyone who takes it away from me will taste my vengeance, no matter what I have to do. The trouble with the current situation is the Zola family.

As I was thinking, a woman entered the room we were discussing, swinging her hair in a vertical roll.

She opens the door boldly and gives us a smile.

"How are you, Hero-dono? Oh dear, I never imagined the Lady of Atley would be in a place like this."

The one who appeared with a white attitude was Deirdre-senpai, Dorothea's sister-in-law's sister, Deirdre-senpai. She's graduated from the school now, but she's still our senior.

Clarice-senpai breaks out in a cold sweat, but Deirdre-senpai immediately turns her gaze towards me. You don't intend to pursue it?

"Time is short, so I'll be quick. The Bartford family has become embroiled in a power struggle within the royal court."

Marie holds her head and shouts it as it is.

"It's the worst! Why would we get involved in this?!"

Deirdre-senpai laughed.

"It's only natural since you have defeated the Black Knight who has been tormenting the kingdom for years. The Baldfalt family's military reputation is growing. —And there is a movement in some parts of the royal palace to get such a Baldfalt family on their side."

Thinking that we wanted to be left alone, Clarice senior nipped at Deirdre-senpai's story.

"Part of it means that it's not an official decision of the royal palace, right?"

"You're right. As to be expected of the Atley daughter."

As me and Marie both nodded our heads, Clarice senior explained in detail.

"Someone gave the order without permission and those people took advantage of it. No, maybe they are being used. If we can target that point, we can drive those people away."

Marie turned her gaze towards me.

"Hey, this means that they forged an official text, right? They're not good?"

The Zola family seems to be crossing a dangerous bridge.

Deirdre-senpai praises Marie.

"It seems like you've noticed. Yeah. There are people in the royal palace doing dangerous things. Isn't it nice to be related to the Roseblade family?"

That's a big help! It was worth it to sacrifice Nix! I'm glad I played the role of Cupid, for the love of Nix and sister-in-law Dorothea.

"I can't thank Nix enough for what he did (marry Dorothea)"

"How can you say that when you lied to him?"

"Call me love cupid. I just brought the two together as a perfect match."

Finley, who was listening to me, didn't like it, and Colin is nodding his head.

Marie mutters, "You're a lousy cupid," but I ignore her and decide to get my act together.

"So, how far is the Roseblade family willing to help us?"

Deirdre-senpai smiled.

"—I'll be happy to support you if you take over the house."

"No, I have a floating island."

'Well just rule them both. Oh, and I got a message from your brother-in-law, Nix. 'Don't think you're the only one who can escape.' he said. Huh.

Brother-in-law Nix is very nice to prepare a territory for his brother."

I was surprised that Nix was called brother-in-law, but more importantly, what's the point of letting me take over the family home? I was hoping to have a floating island to chill on!

Colin compliments me.

"I don't understand, but you did it, brother Leon!"

This is the worst.

Fucking Nix, he forced me to manage my parents' house.

That's a disgusting thing; to sacrifice your family!

◇

Back in the parlor, Deirdre-senpai was sitting in front of Zola and the others.

She crossed her legs and showed them a sexy posture.

If it were only for looks, she would be considered beautiful too.

"But still, did you think you could get away with such a sloppy operation?"

Zola was shrinking in front of the much younger Deirdre-senpai.

She was shrinking in front of the daughter of a Earl House.

The same was true for Merce, and when it came to Rutart, he was cringing.

Zola managed to let out a protest.

"This is Baron Bartford's problem. The Roseblade family has no right to interfere."

"It's my relative's house. It's a relative's house and it would be a disaster if something happened to them, so we obviously offered help. But it's only those with very strong bloodlines that can help you now, though."

It was clear Zola was annoyed.

Merce crowded Zola.

"Mother! My marriage is at stake. If I get this house, I can marry into a court nobleman's baronial family. Do something."

I can't help but almost laugh because she's so goofy.

Leave it to Deirdre-senpai to handle it, and it will all come full circle.

That being said, I'll get back at Nix someday.

What the hell was that guy thinking, forcing his cute little brother to manage his family home?

Deirdre-senpai crossed her arms.

"You should be relieved. Your viscount family will be disqualified."

"What?"

When Merce shows a surprised face, Deirdre-senpai tells her with a smile.

"It's only natural since you prepared the documents under the pretense that it was the decision of the royal palace. I'm sure you'll be able to find a way to make it work. You should go home with an open mind."

As Zola stands up in frustration, Deirdre-senpai stops Rutart.

"Oh, and Rutart-dono"

"Excuse me?"

Watching Rutart go easy on Deirdree senior, it makes me sad to see how weak he is to the girls after all that bravado.

It's the fate of school boys.

"I heard that you stood by in your territory and didn't move to aid the royal capital during the crisis? I can't help but wonder if you are qualified to

be a knight. House Roseblade questions your qualifications to the royal court."

"What? What? It's none of your business! And besides, I just didn't see the point of participating in a fight like that!"

"The head of the family, brother-in-law Nix, and even Lord Leon went into battle, but you, the heir, are running away? It's an embarrassment for the warriors. Shame on you."

Unable to speak back, Rutart leaves the room, almost in tears.

Zola and Merce were complaining to Rutoart about it.

"Totally, if he had gone to war, this wouldn't have happened."

"He's really useless." I felt a bit of sympathy for Luthier's position within the family.

◇

Rutart walked through the mansion.

Every now and then, when he found a decorated jar, he would pick it up and throw it.

"Damn! Damn it! You're making fun of me!"

The reason they didn't go to war was because they didn't think they could win.

In fact, there was a rumor among some that the first group would be discarded in order to crush the Duke of Redgrave's army.

Hearing that scared him.

"It's not my fault. If it were true, I wouldn't even want to inherit a territory like this. What I deserve is the estate that Nix got. I was supposed to be the earl."

If only I could be an earl myself—as he was thinking about this, he heard a voice talking.

He was about to yell in frustration, but he is surprised to see someone in the room and closes his mouth.

(Why are those guys here!?)

The ones in the room were Marie and—Clarice.

"Senpai, am I being looked down upon? Colin, you too. I'm your sister-in-law."

"Maybe it's because you're family."

"—Colin, you call your sister 'senior' honestly, don't you? I can't get you two to treat me like that?"

"I'm sorry about that." From their conversation, Rutart realized that Leon knew about this too.

It was impossible that Marie knew and her fiancé, Leon, did not know.

And this is the mansion of the Baron Bartford family.

It was obvious that Barcus also had a hand in it.

If I bring this information to the royal capital, I'll have a chance.

Rutart was annoyed at Deirdre for saying so many things to him, but he smiled and quietly walked away from the front of the room as it was.

◇

Zora and her family had left, and Deirdre-senpai-senpai and Clarice-senpai were also resting in the room they were prepared.

Since it was nighttime, me and Marie were talking with Luxion.

"Aren't you embarrassed to dump all the work on Deirdre-senpai? If you're a man, tell her!"

Marie was crowing at me for not telling her.

"They wouldn't be convinced by what I said. Sometimes it doesn't matter who said it, even if it's true. Wouldn't it be more persuasive if it was said by an expert rather than an amateur?"

"Don't mess with me! You were never going to get in trouble for that!"

Marie seemed to have seen through it.

It's true that it's a hassle, so I threw it all out there, but if the result is the same anyway, it's bound to be easier.

Luxion shook his one eye and reproduced his dismay.

"While I was away, Master was still the same as ever, right?"

"It would have been less of a hassle if you'd been by my side!"

"I don't think you should be driven to that point with Partner and Arroganz. I'm sure Partner's main gun would have kicked the Principality's troops down onto the curb."

He suddenly becomes quiet.

"—Maybe you didn't want to kill them?"

I let out a sigh. At first, I thought that even the Black Knight could be left alive. However, I was too naive.

"I didn't want to get used to killing students, at least while I was a student."

"I didn't want to, and I still regret it."

If I had been serious from the beginning—but if I had, I would have been more notorious and more people would have died.

"The world doesn't work the way you want it to, does it? More importantly, what's going on with you? Can you stay for a while?"

When I asked Luxion about his future plans, the answer that came back was as expected.

"I was called out on short notice, so I just came back in a hurry. I have a lot of plans for the future."

"Is that going to take much longer? I have to ask you something."

"What is it?"

I can't help but wonder about that grudge spirit that shouted my ancestor's name.

"It's about the saint's necklace. You remember the grudge spirit that haunted that one? I need to talk to it."

"—He's quiet these days, but if Master comes in front of it, there's a good chance he'll go wild. Besides, weren't you scared?"

"Don't say I'm scared of it! I'm only scared of ghosts!"

Marie asked me what I was going to do when I said I had something to do with the grudge.

"What are you talking about?"

"A lot of things. I'm too far removed from that otome game than I thought

I would be. There's something disgusting about it, so I've decided to give it a good look."

Marie seemed anxious about that, too.

"That's right. And since we saved the Redgrave family by mistake, we've robbed Olivia and His Highness Julius and the others of their show.

But since the lass boss didn't appear, it's fine, right?"

I understand that—but I'm still getting a bad feeling about this.

I don't like my premonitions because they're usually true.

"If it's nothing, then it's fine. Luxion let me talk to him at once."

"I have a schedule to keep, so please hurry."

Luxion who wanted to leave at once was rushing Marie and me.

◇

After winning the war, the Royal Palace of the Holfort Kingdom was busy dealing with the post-war situation.

The civil servants were working hurriedly and usually stayed up all night.

Angelica hurriedly visited Queen Mylene and relayed the information she extracted from Hertrude.

"Lady Mylene, I can't just stand by and watch. That woman is also connected to this Marquis of Frampton. She's dangerous!"

The presence of Olivia, who controlled Julius and other noblemen behind the scenes, was terrifying to Angelica. It seemed as if the Kingdom was crumbling from the inside.

After hearing about the Marquis' case from Angelica, Mylene let out a

small sigh.

Then, she responds in a surprising way.

"Angelica, I'm sorry, but Hertrudes' testimony isn't enough to get rid of the Marquis."

"Then why don't we interrogate the people in charge? If we don't act quickly, His Highness Julius will be in danger. He was seduced by that woman into joining the army! Lady Mylene, can't you get rid of just her?"

It was partly due to intuition that Angelica saw Olivia as dangerous.

That's no good. I didn't notice it before, but that woman can't be kept at His Highness's side.

If she was just a love interest, she wouldn't have gone this far. Although dissatisfied, she would accept her as a mistress.

But the current Olivia is no good.

Even from Angelica's view, her influence increased massively. She went from a commoner to a woman who could change the country.

"Clarice has been trapped by that one too. Many of the opposing students in the school have been removed, and now no one will stand against her."

In front of Angelica, who is making a desperate plea, Mylene looks a little sad. She seems to be wondering whether to tell her right here. As if she made up her mind, she grabbed Angelica's shoulders.

"Angelica, listen to me carefully."

"Lady Mylene."

Angelica was silenced by Mylene's unusual forcefulness.

Mylene closes her eye in frustration.

"The Royal Palace has officially decided to end your engagement with Julius."

"—it's true? So they weren't just talks about ending them, you actually did?"

She didn't want to believe her. Mylene nodded quietly.

"I'm sorry."

She felt her excitement cool down quickly.

Angelica felt the strength in both her legs leave.

Mylene hugs and supports her as she collapses.

Angelica asks Mylene in a shaky voice.

"Why? I have worked so hard for His Highness. I've worked hard every day to make myself a worthy wife. Have I done something wrong? Lady Mylene, please tell me. I will fix it right away. So please wait for me before breaking the engagement."

Angelica was in tears.

Most of her life was her being groomed into a queen worthy of Julius. If he discarded her, what would be left of her?

To Angelica, Julius was everything.

"You've done very well. I would have liked to call you my daughter-in-law. But there are things in this world we cannot control."

"Because I nagged His Highness? Did His Highness complain about me?"

She thought she had been thinking of Julius in the academy and advising him. Angelica was aware that she had been forceful.

But it was necessary for Julius' sake. Someone had to say it, and she thought she had been trying to be that devil.

Since Mylene didn't answer, Julius must have said something to her as well.

However, after a short pause, Mylene told her the truth.

The real reason why she broke off the engagement, even if she had to fight with the Redgrave dukes.

"I have no complaints with Angelica. She has done well so far. But you see—even I can't help it. A girl named Olivia has been admitted to the temple as a saint."

"Oh, it's a lie. Why is she a saint?"

A saint—that's the bloodline of the sixth adventurer involved in the founding of the Holfort Kingdom.

It is said that because of her, the Holfort Kingdom was born, and its power is still considered sacred today.

She is a miracle-working saint who can overcome any difficult adventure with her help.

No other being is more worthy of the worship of adventurers.

As a royalty, the lineage of the five adventurers remained in the family, but only the saint was lost.

It is commonly reported that after the founding of the country, she was deemed to have completed her role and set out on another adventure.

And now, a woman with the power to be a saint was even chosen to be a saint from time to time.

Ever since the saint's necklace and bracelet were taken away from the temple decades ago, the position of saint has been absent.

Without the three tools, the power of a saint cannot be recreated.

Until now, surrogates who could not replicate the power of a saint had always called themselves saints, but Olivia was different.

But Olivia was different.

"Reports from the temple say that she has recreated her power even without the saint's tools. I have received reports that she is a true saint, a true saint who is on par with the First Lady."

Not a fake, but the real thing.

What this means is that she is worth a lot more than Angelica.

"Impossible. That one's a saint or something! He's the only one who—"

Mylene slowly pulls away, embracing a confused Angelica.

"You know how big of a deal saints are in this country, don't you?"

"No, no. Lady Milene, I don't!"

Milene turned away as Angier squirmed and looked at her.

"There's a move to promote Saint Olivia as Julius' fiancée. It's the Marquis of Frampton who's behind it. And many of the nobles have accepted this as a celebration. There is nothing I can do to change this trend."

Angelica crumbled to the spot and cried out loud as she could.

◇

The royal capital of the Holfort Kingdom.

A special stage had been prepared in the square, and knights in armor were on alert for their surroundings.

A ceremony with a number of monstrous guards was prepared for one girl to assume the position of a saint after many years of absence.

Backstage, Julius hugged Olivia and put his hands around her waist.

"You look beautiful, Olivia"

"I'm glad, Julius."

Olivia accepted Julius' words with a smile, but inside she had a dark smile on her face.

I've finally made it here. When I am resurrected as a saint—I will do everything possible to destroy this country.

A white dress was prepared for Olivia.

She holds the saint's staff given to her by the temple and wears a bracelet on her left hand.

Julius is disappointed to see the replica prepared in place of the saint's necklace.

"I'm sorry that I could only prepare a fake for your fine day. I've been looking for it for so long that I couldn't find it. Everyone else looked for it too, but we couldn't even get a clue."

Olivia shook her head.

"It's fine. I'm just happy to be able to wear such a beautiful dress.

Besides, the wand and bangles are too expensive for me, and I think I'd be put off by them."

Julius was thrilled with Olivia for saying something so 'new'. It was a statement that was based on Julius's inner feelings of being fed up with the noblewomen dressing up.

Well, I don't really need a wand or an arm band, though. They're just vessels inhabiting my power. —I wonder if the part of me that dwells in the collar is doing well?

He was concerned about the saint's necklace, which had never been returned to them.

If she made it known in a big way that he was here, he would surely come running to it.

At that time, I'll change my mind about taking it back in.

"I'd better get going. I'll go say hi to everyone."

"Oh, let the people of the Capital see what a saint looks like."

When Olivia pulled away from Julius, she walked up to the stage.

Olivia clasps her hands together as she walks up the stairs.

We're almost there, Lea. I'm going to get my revenge on those guys.

Tens of thousands of spectators cheered at Olivia's arrival as she took the stage. The cracking cheers shook the atmosphere.

As Olivia slowly spread her arms out, the crowd naturally grew quiet.

And then Olivia's voice reaches all the spectators.

It wasn't a loud voice, but it was a voice that reached the hearts of all those around her.

"I am Olivia—I am Saint Olivia. People of the Kingdom of Holfort, the saint has returned to this land once again."

The crowd was mesmerized by the smiling Olivia.

Some of them were moved to tears, as if they had seen a goddess.

"I have only one wish, and that is to bring true peace to the land. It is to bring true peace to this land. Please, ladies and gentlemen—please give me strength."

If she clasped her hands and showed a gesture of prayer to the heavens, the spectators, let alone the knights and nobles who were on guard, would admire her appearance.

Olivia—the saint in Olivia stretched out her hands to the heavens.

Yes, I have only one wish. Only to get this land back into the hands of those who should be. I will use you all up for that.

Olivia's eyes, looking up at the sky, were severely muddy, even though

she was looking at the blue sky.